



Pilgrim's Progress  
FROM THIS WORLD TO  
THAT WHICH IS TO COME

JOHN BUNYAN

REVISED AND EDITED  
BY  
STEVE PHILLIPS

PILGRIM'S  
PROGRESS

By  
**John Bunyan**

Revised and Edited by  
Steve Phillips

Cover Art by  
Patricia Phillips

ISBN 978-2785-97-1  
First Edition, 2003

**THIS BOOK IS NOT FOR SALE**

Permission is granted for up to 100 copies of all materials contained herein to be freely copied and distributed by any means, provided that none of the materials are offered for sale or contained as a part of any item offered for sale.

To request permission for any other use, contact author at [oyinbosteve@yahoo.com](mailto:oyinbosteve@yahoo.com) or at PO Box 1531 Shelton Wa USA 98584

**Freely you have received, freely give [Mt.10:8]**

In any citation or translation of this work, do not attribute the text to the author unless quoting or translating verbatim.

Translation into other languages is hereby granted by the author in accordance with the aforementioned.

Published by DAC-PRINTS 9 Idi-Ape, Basorun Rd UIPO Box 19407 Ibadan Oyo State  
Nigeria

## INTRODUCTION

Apart from the Bible itself, *PILGRIM'S PROGRESS* has been read, printed, and translated more often than any other book in the world. It was written by John Bunyan in the mid 1600's from his prison cell in Bedford, England. He had been arrested and confined there by the rulers of the Anglican Church.

His crime? Preaching the Gospel without a license and teaching the Word of God in homes instead of as an official clergyman in the cathedral. When offered to be released if he would promise to cease preaching, he replied, "If you release me today, I will resume preaching tomorrow."

He therefore remained imprisoned for twelve years. The kindly jailer, though, knowing that he had been delivered up out of envy as had his Lord, would often secretly release him at night to be with his family with the promise that Bunyan would return before dawn, which he always did.

This revision is an attempt to employ simple English while maintaining the feel of the original, without degenerating to the casual irreverence of contemporary expression.

The original was written in two parts, the story of Christian followed by that of his wife, Christianna. This version merges the two parts into one continuous narrative so as not to reinforce the prevalent evil in West Africa of the husband minding his own pursuits while leaving the wife and children to fend for themselves.

It is hoped that those familiar with the original will graciously excuse any clumsiness and improprieties encountered in the interest of making this classic contribution to Christian instruction available to peoples of another culture whose second language is English.

*And now little Book, take your Wing,  
Fly with Light and Life to bring  
Into hearts as the Spirit's Arrow,  
And set their feet on the Way that's Narrow.*

## CONTENTS

1	THE BOOK, A BURDEN, & EVANGELIST 1
2	OBSTINATE, PLIABLE, HELP, & WORLDLY WISEMAN 3
3	MT. SINAI & LEGALITY 8
4	THE GATE & INTERPRETER 11
5	CHRIST'S CROSS, A HILL OF DIFFICULTY, & THE LIONS 18
6	PALACE BEAUTIFUL 24
7	CHRISTIANNA, CHILDREN, & MERCY 27
8	THE SLOUGH, GATE, & EVIL ONES 32
9	INTERPRETER'S HOUSE 37
10	THE CROSS, DIFFICULTY'S HILL, & GRIM 44
11	TWO ARE ONE 49
12	APOLLYON 60
13	SICKNESS & LESSONS 65
14	VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH 70
15	GREAT-HEART RETURNS 80
16	FAITHFUL & FAMILY 87
17	HONESTY, FEARING, SELF-WILL, & TALKATIVE 95
18	GAIUS 110
19	EVANGELIST & VANITY FAIR 128
20	HOPEFUL, BY-MEANS, & DEMAS 140
21	DOUBTING CASTLE & GIANT DESPAIR 149
22	THE BRETHERN RETURN & DELECTABLE MOUNTAINS 153
23	IGNORANCE, TURN-AWAY, & LITTLE FAITH 161
24	VALIANT-FOR-TRUTH, FLATTERER, & ATHEIST 167
25	DARWIN THE GIANT & THE ENCHANTED GROUND 175
26	IGNORANCE & THE RIVER 188
27	THE CITY 198

# 1

## THE BOOK, A BURDEN, & EVANGELIST

As I walked through the wilderness of this world, becoming weary, I laid down and slept. And as I slept, I dreamed a dream. I saw a man clothed in filthy rags [Isa.64:6], with his face turned away from his house [Lk.14:33]. In his hand he held a Book [Hab.2:2; Josh.8:34] and a great Burden was upon his back [Ps.38:4].

As he read, he wept and trembled [Isa.66:2], and being in deep distress he cried out most sorrowfully, “What shall I do?” [Acts 2:37; 16:29,30].

Being in this sad state, he went home and tried to hide his distress as long as he could. Finally, unable to contain himself further, he spoke earnestly to his wife and children.

“O my dear Wife, and you, my lovely Children, I am ruined because of this great Burden which is upon me. Beyond that, I am informed that our City will certainly be burned with fire from Heaven [2 Pet.3:10-12] and we shall all miserably perish. But I know of no Way [Jn.14:6] by which we may be delivered.”

Upon hearing this, his Wife and Children were greatly alarmed, not because they believed him, but they thought some sickness had entered his mind. So, quickly he was sent to bed in the hopes that some rest might settle his mind.

Through a restless night, his distress grew worse and worse. Again in the morning he began to relate to them the sure Judgment

awaiting them all. But they began to be hardened in their hearts and spoke harshly against him. Sometimes they mocked him, other times they ignored him.

The poor man would withdraw from them and earnestly pray for and pity them. He also walked alone in the fields, praying and sighing while reading his Book which caused him to cry out again, “What must I do to be saved?”

As he was thus engaged and not knowing which way to flee, I saw a man named *Evangelist* approach him and ask, “Why do you cry so?”

Said he, “Why, good Sir, I see by the Book in my hand that I am condemned to die and after that to come to Judgment [Heb.9:27]. I am full of fear [Prov.1:7] but do not know what to do to be rid of this Burden or how to escape Eternal Burning” [Mk.9:43, 44].

Upon hearing this, *Evangelist* gave him a portion of the Book which read, “Flee from the wrath to come” [Mt.3:7].

But the man said in great confusion, “But where must I flee?”

*Evangelist* pointed across a wide field saying, “Do you see that Narrow Gate afar off?” [Mt.7:13, 14]. But he could not see that far and told him so. “Well, then, do you see that Shining Light?” [Ps.119:105]. At that he replied, “I think I do.”

“Good. Keep that Light in your eye and go directly to the Narrow Gate, knock, and it shall be told you what you must do.”

With that the man began to run and had not gone far from his own house when his Wife and Children began to cry out after him to return [Lk.14:26]. But the man put his fingers in his ears and ran on still, crying, “Life! Life! Eternal Life!” So he did not look back [Gen.19:17] but ran straight for Life and safety with the Light guiding his feet along the Path.

## 2

### OBSTINATE, PLIABLE, HELP, & WORLDLY WISEMAN

*Obstinate*, himself being a stubborn and unreasonable man, and his neighbor, *Pliable*, who could easily be persuaded to follow nearly anything, rushed together to bring *Christian* back by force. They easily caught up with him since they had no burden upon their backs as did he.

*Chr.* “Neighbors, why do you come after me in haste?”

They said, “To persuade you to go back with us.”

*Chr.* “O, that could never be. You dwell in the City of Destruction, a place that will surely sink lower than the Grave and carry all within it to a place that burns with Fire and Brimstone. Please, join with me and flee the Wrath to come.”

*Obs.* “What! And leave our friends and comforts behind?”

*Chr.* “Certainly! Because all that you forsake is not worthy to be compared with even a little of that which is to be found in the place where I am going [2 Cor.4:18; Rom.8:18]. There is more than enough for all who will come and more besides” [Lk.15:17].

*Obs.* “What are the things you seek, since you are leaving all the World to find them?”

*Chr.* “I seek an Inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, and which does not fade away reserved in Heaven for all who diligently seek it [1 Pet.1:4, Heb.11:16]. Here, you can read about it in my Book.”

*Obs.* “Ha! Away with your useless Book! Will you go back with us, or not?”

*Chr.* “No, not I. I’ve set my hand to the plough and I cannot look back” [Lk.9:62].

*Obs.* “Come, neighbor *Pliable*, Let us leave this crazy-headed fool to wander where he doesn’t even know where he is going. There are many like him who are wiser in their own eyes than seven men who can render a Reason.”

*Pli.* “Don’t insult him. What if what the good *Christian* says is true? The things he speaks of sound far better than our own. My heart moves me to go with him.”

*Obs.* “What! More fools still? Listen to me and go back! Who knows where such a brain-sick fellow will lead you? Go back and be wise.”

*Chr.* “Don’t listen to him, neighbor *Pliable*, come with me to share in the things I’ve mentioned and many more Glories besides. If you do not believe me, read them for yourself in my Book. The truth of all that is spoken therein is confirmed by the Blood of Him that made it” [Heb.9:17-21].

*Pli.* “Well, I think this sounds like a more pleasant offer than what I have at home. I think I will go with *Christian*.”

*Obs.* “Nonsense! I, for one, will not proceed on such a fantastical journey! Be gone, both of you. I’m going back to a normal and sensible life.” And, saying so, he turned on his heel and strode rapidly back to the City of Destruction grumbling to himself all the way.

So *Christian* and *Pliable* fell into step together and proceeded across the plain towards the Narrow Gate. And, as they walked, they began to discuss with one another.

*Pli.* “Tell me more, good neighbor, about what things we shall meet there, and what enjoyments we will have when we arrive.”

*Chr.* “It has not entered into the heart of man all that God has prepared for those who love Him [1 Cor.2:9], but let me read of them to you from my Book. It was written by Him who cannot lie” [Tit.1:2].

*Pli.* “Yes, yes! Do go on!”

*Chr.* “An endless Kingdom is prepared for us to inhabit along with Everlasting Life [Isa.45:17; Jn.10:27-29]. There are Crowns of glory to be given to us [2 Tim.4:8] and Garments that will make us shine like the sun in the heavens [Rev.22:5; Mt.13:43]. No crying or sorrow shall

be there for the Owner of the place will wipe all tears from our eyes” [Isa.15:8; Rev.7:16, 17; 21:4].

*Pli.* “And whom shall we dwell with there?”

*Chr.* “We shall be with Seraphim and Cherubim, creatures that will dazzle your eyes to look on them. There you shall meet with thousands, and tens of thousands that have gone before us to that place. All of them are holy, everyone walking in the sight of God and standing in His presence with acceptance forever [Isa.6:2; Rev.5:8-14; 7:9-17]. There we shall see men, that by the World were cut in pieces, burnt in flames, eaten of beasts, and drowned in the seas because of the love that they had to the Lord of the place [Heb.11:35-38, Jn.12:25, Rev.14:1-5]. All of these are safe forevermore and clothed with Immortality as with a garment” [2 Cor.5:2-5; 1 Cor.15:53-57].

*Pli.* “Oh, the hearing of this is enough to thrill my soul! But how can we become sharers in such things? How can we possess them?”

*Chr.* “The Lord Governor of the Country has recorded in His Book that any who are truly willing, may have it bestowed upon them freely by Him whose it is.”

*Pli.* “Come on then, good companion, let us hasten our steps to this Good Place!”

*Chr.* “I cannot go as fast as I would like because of this Burden upon my back which I hope to be rid of by reason of entering in by the Narrow Gate.”

Being so involved in their discussion as they were, neither noticed that they had come near to a very marshy bog called the Slough of Despond. And a slippery treacherous land it is. Many have fallen into despair and hopelessness therein.

Before they knew it, both had heedlessly missed their step and tumbled into its mire. There they wallowed for a time, becoming grievously covered with its dirt; and *Christian* began to sink due to the weight of his Burden.

*Pli.* “Ah, neighbor *Christian*, where are you now?”

*Chr.* “Truly, I do not know!”

*Pliable*, upon hearing this answer, began to be greatly offended and angrily and mockingly said to his fellow, “Is this the Happiness you

have promised me? If we meet with such difficulties at the beginning of our course, what might we meet between this and the Journey’s end? If I get out of this alive, you can possess your imagined Promised Land alone!”

And with that he gave a desperate struggle or two and got himself out of the mire on the side closest to his house and went away leaving *Christian*.

*Christian* was left to tumble about in the Slough of Despond alone though he struggled to reach the side nearest the Narrow Gate, crying, “Save me O God; for I sink in deep mire, where there is no standing” [Ps.69:1, 2]. At his lowest point a voice standing above him on the bank said, “What are you doing here? Did you not look for the Steps?”

Gazing hopefully up, he beheld a kindly looking man named *Help*.

*Chr.* “Good Sir, Fear followed so closely upon me that I fled the other way and fell in.”

*Help* “Give me your hand.” And so he lifted him out and set him upon solid ground and established his going once again [Ps.40:2].

*Christian*, after recovering his breath said, “Sir, why is this place not repaired so that Travelers do not fall therein?”

*Help* “It is not possible to mend this place. It is where all the filth that attends Conviction of sin continually drains. This is why it is named the Slough of Despond; for as a sinner is awakened about his lost condition, at the same time, there arises all manner of fears, doubts, and discouragement in his soul of ever reaching the Heavenly Country.

“It is not the good pleasure of the King that this place should remain as bad as it is [Isa.35:3, 4]. Indeed, His Majesty’s laborers have earnestly tried to patch the place where up to twenty thousand cart loads, yes, millions of wholesome instructions, have been swallowed up here and it remains what it is up to today. True, there are good and solid Steps placed through the midst of the Slough, but few find them due to the fears and uncertainties swirling in their heads. But the ground is good when they once have entered in at the Gate” [1 Sam.12:23].

With hearty thanks to *Help*, *Christian* once again took to his Journey and soon saw someone crossing over the field as if to meet him.

The gentleman's name was *Worldly Wiseman*, who dwelt in the town of Carnal Policy which was not far from the City of Destruction.

WW "How now, why are you laboring in such a burdened manner?"

Chr. "Burdened indeed! I am heading for the Narrow Gate where I have been promised to be put into a Way which will relieve me of this load."

WW "Who instructed you to go this Way to be rid of your Burden?"

Chr. "A very good and noble man by name, *Evangelist*."

WW "Ha! I thought so. Cursed be his counsel! There is not a more dangerous and troublesome Way than the one he has set you in. I see that you have already met with such by reason of the dirt that is upon you.

"Listen to me, my friend, in this Way you will likely meet with pain, hunger, lack of all good things, sword, lions, dragons, darkness, and death. There are many testimonies to prove my words. So why should you so carelessly cast yourself away into such perils upon the advice of a stranger such as this *Evangelist*?"

Chr. "Why, Sir, this Burden is more terrible to me than all of the things you've mentioned. I will gladly risk them all if only I can be rid of it."

WW "How did come to obtain this Burden in the first place?"

Chr. "By reading this Book in my hand."

WW "Humph! I thought so. Many other weak men have been distracted and confused by trying to grasp things too high for their simple minds. If you would be wise, listen to my advice. There is a Remedy at hand which will not expose you to such dangers as mentioned which you have already begun to experience. I should know, being as I am, *Worldly Wiseman*."

Chr. "Please, Sir, open this secret to me so I may be free of my Burden."

WW "Gladly. Why, in yonder village of Morality you will find a gentleman by name, *Legality*. He has skill to remove such Burdens as you have and will even gladly accommodate you to settle there with your

Wife and Children. It is a very pleasant place to dwell with the most civil and agreeable neighbors."

At this *Christian* was hesitant and disturbed in his mind since the advice was contrary to what he had received [Isa.8:20]. But nevertheless, he presently asked of the way to his place.

WW "Do you see that high Hill over yonder? That is the way you must go.

# 3

## MT. SINAI & LEGALITY

So *Christian* turned out of his Way to go to Mr. *Legality's* house for help. But as he approached the Hill (being named Mt. Sinai), he stood terrified. Its height hung threateningly far above his head and flashes of fire burst from the hillside. Here he trembled under his Burden which grew heavier by the moment while fearfully sweating, expecting to be burnt at any instant [Ex.19:16, 18; Heb.12:21; Gal.3:10, 21, 22].

While thus situated in shame, sorrows, and terror, he saw *Evangelist* striding rapidly towards him with a stern and dreadful look upon his face.

*Evang.* "Are you not *Christian*, the one whom I found crying outside the walls of the City of Destruction? What are you doing here?"

*Christian* hardly knew what to say but managed a weak, "Yes, Sir, I am the one."

*Evang.* "Did I not point you to the Narrow Gate, how are you now so quickly turned out of the Way?" [Gal.1:6-9].

*Christian* shamefully related his encounter and his foolish decision to turn into the way of *Legality*.

*Evang.* "Stand still and I will show you the Words of God. See that you do not refuse Him who is speaking, for if they did not escape who refused Him who spoke on earth, how shall we escape if we refuse Him who spoke from Heaven? [Heb.2:2, 3; 12:25]. Now, the Just shall live by faith, but if any man draws back, My soul has no pleasure in him [Heb.10:38]. You are the man who is running into this misery. You have begun to reject the counsel of the Most High and to draw back your foot from the Way of Peace, even almost to the risking of your Destruction."

Then *Christian* fell down at his feet as if dead, crying, "Woe is me! For I am ruined!"

At the sight of this *Evangelist* caught him by the right hand saying, "All manner of sins and blasphemies shall be forgiven men [Mt.12:31]. Be not faithless, but believing."

At this, *Christian* revived a little and stood up trembling before *Evangelist*.

*Evang.* "Pay much closer attention to what I have told you lest you drift away from it [Heb.2:1]. Now, let me tell you who it was that tried to turn you out of the way and to whom he directed you. The man who met you was rightly named *Worldly Wiseman* for he only holds to the teaching of this World [I Jn.4:5]. This is why he always attends church in the town of Morality and why he so hates the cross [Gal.6:12].

"There are three things in this man's counsel that you must utterly hate: (1) He has turned you out of the Way by worldly counsel from that Narrow Gate which you must strive to enter, for few are they that find it [Lk.13:24; Mt.7:13, 14]. (2) You must hate his making the Cross a thing despised in your eyes. You are to prefer the Cross of Christ above all the treasures of this life [Heb.11:25, 26]. The King of Glory has plainly told you that he who will save his life shall lose it [Mk.8:35]. (3) You must hate his setting your feet in the way of Destruction as I shall now expound unto you.

"*Legality* is that son of the Bondwoman who is in bondage with her children [Gal.4:21-27], and that Hill is none other than Mt. Sinai with its thunderous Law about to break upon your head with wrath from Heaven. Now if these be in bondage, how can you expect to be set free by them? Therefore, following *Legality* and the Law can never free you from your Burden for no man was ever yet rid of his burden by him because you cannot be Justified by works of the Law" [Rom.3:20-22].

After saying this, *Evangelist* called aloud to Heaven to confirm his words; and out of the Mountain under which poor *Christian* stood came Words and Fire and the earth did quake with the sound of the Words, "As many as are the works of the Law are under the curse; for it is written, 'Cursed is every one who does not perform all things written in the book of the Law to do them'" [Gal.3:10].

Now *Christian* looked for nothing but death [Ps.119:120] and began to cry out miserably, even cursing the time he met with *Worldly*

*Wiseman* and calling himself a thousand fools for listening to his counsel.

*Chr.* “Sir, what do you think? Is there yet hope? May I now go back upon the Way to the Narrow Gate? Shall I be abandoned for this? I am grievously sorry I listened to this man’s counsel; but may my sin be forgiven?”

*Evang.* “Your sin is very great and by it you have committed two evils; you have forsaken the Way that is good to tread upon forbidden paths [Jer.2:13]. Yet the man at the Gate will receive you for He is full of Goodwill towards men [Lk..2:14]. Only, take heed that you do not turn aside again lest you perish from the Way when His wrath is kindled but a little” [Ps.2:12].

Then did *Christian* bow low with a thousand thanks for this severe but gracious Word, at which *Evangelist* kissed him, gave him one smile, and bid him God speed. Thus went *Christian* like one treading upon forbidden ground straight to the Gate, neither looking to the right nor to the left [Ps.107:7].

# 4

## THE GATE & INTERPRETER

With no further delay, I saw that *Christian* made his way at last to that Narrow Gate which had so much occupied his longing thoughts. Above it was written in plain letters, “Knock, and it shall be opened unto you” [Mt.7:8]. He knocked therefore more than once or twice, saying,

*May I now enter here? Will He who is within  
Open to sorry me, though I have been  
An undeserving rebel? Then shall I  
Not fail to sing His lasting praise on high.*

After some time there came a sober-minded person to the Gate named *Goodwill* who asked, “Who goes there? From where have you come and what do you seek?”

*Chr.* “Here is a poor burdened sinner. I come from the City of Destruction, but am going to Mount Zion, that I may be delivered from the wrath to come. I pray, Sir, if you will be willing to let me in by this Narrow Way?”

*Good.* “I am willing with all my heart. Enter, Beloved of the Lord” [Deut.33:12]. And, with that, he opened unto him, grasping him by the hand and swiftly pulled him inside.

*Christian* was surprised at this sudden seizing of his person by *Goodwill* and ventured to say so.

*Good.* “A little distance from this Gate, there is erected a strong castle, of which *Beelzebub* is the captain [Mt.12:24]. He and his servants lie in wait in order to shoot fiery arrows at Pilgrims entering at the Gate so as to kill them before they are safe inside.”

*Christian* did at once both rejoice and tremble and sang this song,

*He that will enter in must first without  
Stand knocking at the Gate, nor need he doubt,  
That he who knocks, will surely enter in,  
For God can love him, and forgive his sin.*

So did *Christian* relate his story to the Gatekeeper who had asked him of his Journey thus far to which *Goodwill* did warmly reply, “An open Door is set before you, and no man can shut it [Rev.3:7]. No matter what you may have done contrary to the King before coming here, you will in no way be cast out, for He is kind and merciful to ungrateful and evil men [Jn.6:37; Lk.6:35].

“Now, see to it that you do not turn to the right or the left from the Way which is ever Straight and Narrow before you [Isa.30:21; 35:8]. Many paths will branch off of this one, all of them crooked and wide [Mt.7:13, 14]. By this you will know the right Way from the byways that lead to Destruction. Know, therefore, good *Christian*, that the Lord of the City to where you are going has Himself built this Way and will guide your feet in it if you will but walk therein” [Ps.85:13].

With many thanks *Christian* did gird up his loins, eager to proceed on his Journey once again. And this he did, after a parting word of encouragement from *Goodwill*. “As to your Burden, be content to bear it until you come to the place of Deliverance; for there it will fall from your back by itself. But before you reach there you will shortly come to the house of the *Interpreter*. Do turn in there and benefit from the things he will show you from his storehouse of Wisdom.”

With that, *Christian* bid his friend farewell and went on his Way with gladness of heart, though not without difficulty due to the load he bore. By and by he arrived at the dwelling of the *Interpreter*, at whose door he knocked and requested to see the Master of the house after explaining who he was and what he desired. So, when he came, he did address *Christian* thus, “Come in! Come in! You are highly welcome. I will show you many things that will be profitable to you.” And he bid his servant to light the Candle [Eph.1:17, 18] and for *Christian* to follow in its Light.

He brought him first into a private room where there was a

picture of a most wonderful Person which hung upon the wall. He was both sober and noble, with eyes lifted to Heaven, the best of Books in His hand, and the Law of Truth written upon His lips. The World was behind His back and he stood as if He pleaded with men while a Crown of Gold hung over His head. Then said *Christian*, “What does this mean?”

*Interp.* “This is your invisible Guide, the only One authorized by the Lord to unfold the things above to sinners upon the Way” [Jn.16:7-15].

Next he led him to a very large parlor, full of dust because of never having been swept. Presently he called for a man to come and cleanse the place. Now when he began to sweep, the dust did so fly about that *Christian* gasped and nearly was choked. Then *Interpreter* called for a young Maiden to bring Water and sprinkle the room which was then cleansed with ease.

Noting the questioning look upon *Christian*’s face, the Master of the house offered the explanation. “This parlor is the heart of man that was never sanctified by the Grace of the Gospel. The Dust is that original sin and inward corruption that have defiled the whole man. He that began to sweep is the Law, and she who sprinkled the water, is the Gospel. This is to show you that the Law, through its workings, can never cleanse the heart of a man but only serves to stir up and increase the defilement within.

“It reveals the condition but provides no power to rid of its presence and influence [Rom.5:20; 7:6; I Cor.15:56]. Now, when the Gospel comes with the washing of Water with the Word, the soul is cleansed with ease and sin is overcome by Faith in its power” [Eph.5:26; Rom.1:16; Jn.15:3; Acts 15:9].

Moving on from there (for the house was very large), he took him next to another room in which sat two little children. The senior of the two, *Passion* by name, seemed very discontent while his junior, *Patience*, was calmly and quietly waiting. *Christian* desired to know why they sat as they did.

*Interp.* “The Master of the boys requires them to wait until next year to receive their best things. *Patience* is content with his Master’s will

and wisdom, but *Passion* would have everything now.”

Then a man appeared and poured out a bag of treasure at the feet of *Passion* who immediately took it up and began to mock his companion. But I saw that shortly, he had wasted all away and sat with nothing left to him but rags.

*Interpreter* smiled upon his guest and explained the matter unto him. “*Passion* shows to us the men of this World who will have all of their comforts now while despising to wait for the Best which shall be hereafter. *Patience* is like those who contentedly deny themselves the passing pleasures of sin for a season that they might inherit that which fades not away [Heb.11:25, 26; I Pet.1:4]. As the first did laugh and mock at the second, so at the end of it all, the first did weep and mourn while the last did rejoice in that which can never be taken away. And so the true saying came to pass that the First shall be Last, and the Last, First [Lk.13:24-30]. And again, as is shown by Lazarus and the Rich man, he suffered in this life and was comforted in the Next, while the Rich man enjoyed here and was in torment There” [Lk.16:19-31].

*Chr.* “Then I see that it is not best to covet the things that are now, but to wait for the true Reward to come.”

*Interp.* “You have spoken the truth. For the things that are seen are Temporal, but the things which are not seen are Eternal” [2 Cor.4:18].

Another room was entered where a fire burned within the fireplace along the wall. In front of it stood one who did constantly throw water upon it to quench its flame. But the more he cast his water, the higher and hotter the fire did burn. When *Christian* beheld this, he was greatly perplexed.

*Interp.* “Come, let me show you the reason for this. The Fire is the work of Grace within the heart of man and he who tries to put it out is the devil. But look behind this wall and see why it yet burns and does not go out.”

As he did so, he beheld a Man with a vessel of Oil in His hand which He did continuously (but secretly) pour upon the Fire.

*Interp.* “This is Christ, who continually with the Oil of His Grace maintains the work He has already begun in the heart despite the schemes of the devil [2 Cor.12:7-9, Phil.1:6]. The work goes on unseen and is

difficult at times to perceive how Grace continues its influence in the soul. But it does.”

Taking him by the hand, his Host led him to a pleasant place where a magnificent Palace stood majestically before them with certain persons walking upon its walls, all clothed in Gold. At the sight of this, *Christian* greatly desired with all his heart to enter in.

He then noticed that at the Door of the Palace stood a great company of men, all also desiring to enter within. But in the Doorway stood many fierce and armed men to do what they could to prevent any from passing into the Palace. When the men saw their Opponents and their weapons, they all shrank back in fear and proceeded no further.

It was then that a very bold and stout man came to him who sat at the table to record the names of those who would enter in and said, “Sir, set down my name in your Book, for I shall surely enter in” [Acts 14:22]. That having been done, he immediately put on his helmet, drew his sword, and rushed upon those hindering his way.

They fought him with deadly force, but the man, being not in the least discouraged, fought on bravely, both giving and receiving many wounds. At last, he cut his way through them all and found his entrance into the Palace at which those upon the wall did raise the chorus:

*Come in! Come in!*

*Eternal Glory you shall win!*

So he went in and was received among them with a robe of Gold. When *Christian* had taken note of all these things, he smiled and said, “I think that truly I’ve known the meaning of this.”

There remained yet lessons to be learned, so the *Interpreter* brought him to another room, very dark, in which was a man in an Iron Cage who groaned and sighed as if his heart would break.

He cried out most miserably, “O, Despair grips my soul! Once I thought myself upon the Way to the Heavenly City, but now I am shut up in this Iron Cage. I cannot get out. O, I cannot!”

*Chr.* “But how did you get into this condition?”

*Man* “I left off to Watch and Pray. I allowed my Lusts to lead me about. I sinned against the Light of the Word, and the Goodness of God:

I have grieved away the Spirit and He is gone; I tempted the devil, and he has come to me; I have provoked God to anger, and He has left me; I have so hardened my heart that I cannot repent” [Lk.8:13; Heb.12:16, 17].

*Chr.* “But, is there no Hope for you? The Son of the Blessed One is most Merciful.”

*Man* “No. There is no Hope. I have crucified to myself the Son of God and put Him to open Shame. I have counted His Blood an unholy thing. I have insulted the Spirit of Grace [Heb.6:6; Lk.19:14]. Therefore, I have shut myself out of all the Promises, and nothing remains for me but dreadful, fearful Threatening of certain Judgment and fiery indignation which will consume me as an Adversary” [Heb.10:26-31].

*Chr.* “And for what did you bring yourself into this condition?”

*Man* “For the Lusts, Pleasures, and Profits of this World which I thought would bring me much delight but do now bite and eat at me like a burning worm. O Eternity! Eternity! How shall I meet with the misery awaiting me in Eternity!”

*Interp.* “Let this man’s misery be remembered as an everlasting caution to you.”

*Chr.* “This is most Fearful. May God help me to Watch and be Sober, and to pray that I may shun the Cause of this man’s misery.”

*Interp.* “Before you go, I wish to show you yet one more thing for your profit. Come.” So he took him by the hand and brought him into a bed-chamber where a man arose shaking and trembling while crying out, “The Heavens grow exceedingly black with fearful Thundering amid a raging storm. I hear the great sound of the final Trumpet and see Him who sits upon a Cloud with the Thousands of Heaven at His right and His left.

“They are all in flaming fire, and the Heavens in a burning flame and a Voice cries out, ‘Arise, and come to Judgment!’ [I Cor.15:52; I Thess.4:15, 16; Jude 14, 15; Rev.20:11-15]. The Rocks did split, the Graves did open and the Dead came forth and some sought to hide themselves under the mountains [Jn.5:28; 2 Thess.1:7-10; Isa.26:21; Mic.7:16, 17; Ps.5:1-3; Dan.10:7].

“The Man on the Cloud said with a loud voice, ‘Gather My

Wheat into My barn, but burn up the Chaff with unquenchable Fire!’ [Mal.3:2, 3; 4:1; Dan.7:9, 10, 13; Mt.3:12; 13:30]. I see the Bottomless Pit open its mouth at my feet and the Eye of Him upon the Cloud gazes at me with Indignation and Fury.” And the man did continuously shake and quiver uncontrollably.

And *Christian* was made to Fear with Hope by the things he had seen and went on from there grateful and wiser singing:

*Here I have seen Things rare and profitable,  
Things pleasant, dreadful, Things to make me stable,  
In what I have begun to take in hand;  
Then let me think on them, and understand  
Therefore good they were, and let me be  
Thankful, O good Interpreter, to thee.*

# 5

## CHRIST'S CROSS, A HILL OF DIFFICULTY, & THE LIONS

The Highway up which *Christian* was to go was fenced on either side with a wall named Salvation [Isa.26:1]. At the sight of this, it did make him run though with great difficulty due to the Load upon his back.

He ran on as best as he could until he ascended a small hill called Calvary at the top of which stood a Cross, and a little below, at the bottom, was a Tomb. So I saw in my dream, that just as *Christian* came up to the Cross and gazed upon it, his Burden simply loosed from off his shoulders, fell off his back, and began to tumble down the slope where it entered the Tomb and was seen no more [Jn.3:14, 15; Ps.103:12; Isa.38:17].

Then was *Christian* glad and lightened and said with a merry heart, "He has given me Rest by His Sorrow, and Life by His Death." For some time he stood still to look and wonder; for it was a thing amazing that the sight of the Cross should thus ease him of his Burden. He looked, therefore, and looked again, until the tears did flow down his cheeks [Zech.12:10].

Now as he stood marveling and weeping for joy, three Shining Ones came unto him and saluted him with, "Peace be to you"; and the first said, "Your Sins are forgiven you" [Mk.2:5]; the second stripped him of his rags and clothed him with a Change of Garment [Zech.3:4]; while the third set a Mark on his forehead [Eph.1:13] and gave him a Testament which he was directed to read from as he ran his course to the Heavenly City.

Then *Christian* gave three leaps for Joy [2 Cor.5:17] and went on his way singing:

*Thus far did I come loaded with my Sin;  
Nor could any ease the grief that I was in,  
Until I came here: What a place is this!  
Must here be the beginning of my bliss?  
Must here the Burden fall from off my back?  
Must here the strings that bound it to me crack?  
Blessed Cross! Blessed Tomb! Blessed rather be  
The Man that there was put to Shame for me!*

In my dream I saw him descend Calvary's hill at the bottom of which lay three men fast asleep with their feet bound with chains and irons. *Christian*, being alarmed at their condition tried to arouse them and help them off with their Irons. "If he who goes about as a roaring Lion comes by [1 Pet.5:8], you will certainly be devoured in his jaws!" To this the three raised but one sleepy eyelid and answered him one by one.

*Simple* "I see no danger. Leave us alone."

*Sloth* "Yet a little more sleep."

*Presumption* "Every bucket must stand on its own bottom. We are fine."

And with that, they all rolled over and slept again. *Christian* was troubled and somewhat amazed to meet such men in real danger who so lightly esteemed sound counsel and sincere help. But his thoughts were suddenly interrupted by two men who came tumbling over the wall on the Left Hand of the Narrow Way. They proceeded to join *Christian* as he walked and entered into conversation with one another.

*Chr.* "Gentlemen, from where do you come and to where are you going?"

The two confidently replied as with one voice (for they were really nearly one and the same, their names being, *Formalist* and *Hypocrisy*), "We were born in the land of Vain-Glory, and are on our way to Mount Zion!"

*Chr.* "But why did you not come in at the Gate? Do you not know that he who does not come in by the Door, but climbs up some other way is a thief and a robber?" [Jn.10:1].

*Form./Hyp.* "Well, everyone from our town always takes a short-cut!"

Chr. "Will this not be counted as a trespass by the Lord of the City?"

Form./Hyp. "Don't worry your head about it! We have more than a thousand years of Tradition to justify our entrance by this means which any impartial judge will agree that its legal. Besides, if we get into the Way, what difference does it make how we got here? If we're in, we're in! You came in by the Gate, we tumbled over the wall. How is your condition any better than ours?"

Chr. "I walk by the Rule of my Master, you walk by your own worthless Tradition which is contrary to the Book given to me by Him who made it. You are already counted as Thieves by the Lord of the Way. You came in by yourselves without His Direction and you shall go out by yourselves without His Mercy."

Form./Hyp. "Ha! Will you be judging us? Mind your own business. We keep the Laws and Ordinances as well as you or anyone else."

Chr. "By Laws and Ordinances you will not be saved, since you did not come in by the Door [Col.2:20-23]. I have been given a white Coat by Him who bought it with His own Blood to cover the shame of my nakedness [Isa.61:10]. You have but the native dress of your own Vain-Glory which will never be admitted into His presence. Besides all this, I have a Mark on my forehead [Ezk.9:4] and a Testament in my hand to guide and comfort me along the Way [Ps.119:105, 165] which I see you both are lacking."

*Who's this? The Pilgrim. How! 'Tis very true.  
Old things are passed away; all's become New!  
Strange! He's another Man, upon my word;  
They be fine Feathers, that make a fine Bird.*

To this they made no reply but laughed and separated themselves from him to walk in their own conceits. *Christian* went on alone with his Testament to refresh and comfort him which he gladly read from time to time. Presently he came to the foot of the Hill of Difficulty where the Way ran straight up its steep slope. Below was a Spring placed there by

the Lord of the Way for the refreshment of weary Pilgrims. *Christian* did gladly drink thereof and did say,

*This Hill, though high, I desire to ascend,  
The Difficulty will not me offend.  
For I Perceive the Way to Life lies here:  
Come, take courage, let's neither faint nor fear;  
Better, though Difficult, the Right Way to go,  
Than Wrong, though easy, where the End is Woe.*

Now I saw that *Formalist* and *Hypocrisy* also came to the bottom of the Hill where two other ways branched around its base. Seeing that the Hill was Difficult, though it was the Straight Way, they decided each to take one of the byways, thinking it would surely meet up with the Way of *Christian*. *Formalist* chose the path called Danger which led him into a great Forest where he wandered and was lost, never to be seen again. His companion, *Hypocrisy*, trekked on the road of Destruction which proceeded into a wide field full of Dark Mountains, where he stumbled and fell, and rose no more.

*Shall they who Wrong begin yet Rightly end?  
Shall they at all have Safety for their friend?  
No! No! In head-strong manner they set out,  
And head-long will they fall at last no doubt.*

But now we must return to the Pilgrim's Progress. He had left off running to walking, and from walking to crawling upon his hands and knees because of the steepness of the place. Now about mid-way up the Hill was a pleasant Arbor made by the Lord of the Hill for the refreshment of weary Travelers. There did *Christian* sit down for awhile and comforted his heart from his Testament and admired his Garment that was given him near the Cross.

Presently, his head began to nod and finally he fell into a deep Sleep during which his Testament slipped from his hand. The sun had nearly run its course across the sky when one came to him and awakened

him with a loud voice, "Go to the ant, you Sluggard; consider her ways and be wise!" [Prov.6:6]. Suddenly he sat up, startled and ashamed, and sped on his Way to the top of the Hill.

Here he was met by two who ran with all their might in the direction of the bottom of the Hill. The one was named *Timorous* (for he was ever fearful and cowardly) and the other was called *Mistrust* (this one believed nothing but his own understanding).

*Chr.* "Sirs, what's the matter? You're running the wrong way!"

*Tim.* "The farther we go towards the Heavenly City, the more Danger we meet with. We're going back!"

*Mis.* "That's right! For just before us lie two Lions in the Way, whether sleeping or awake we do not know. But we are not going to risk being torn to pieces by them!"

*Chr.* "You are making me afraid. But where shall I go to be safe? If I go back to my City, that is certain Death by Fire and Brimstone. If I go forward, there is Fear of Death but Life everlasting beyond that. I will yet go forward and entrust myself to the Lord of the Way!"

With that, the two fled on down the Hill without looking back. *Christian*, still with a feeling of dread, reached into his Garment to bring out his precious Testament to receive Comfort in his tribulation. But he felt, and did not find it!

Then he was in great distress for he had lost his Pass into the Heavenly City. Now he was fully confused and did not know what to do. At last, he remembered that he had slept at the Arbor, and falling upon his knees, asked Forgiveness of God for his foolish act. Quickly, he proceeded back down the Path he had trod only earlier that same evening. O, how he prayed and anxiously looked to this side and that if perhaps he might find his Testament all the while bewailing his sinful sleep. "O wretched Man that I am! That I should sleep in the Day-time and in the midst of Difficulty indulge the Flesh!" [I Thess.5:7, 8].

"How many steps I have taken in vain! How like Israel I am who because of Sin had to tread again steps of Sorrow by way of the Red Sea!" [Deut.1:2, 3]. By this time he had come again unto the Arbor where he sat down and wept because he had not found his Testament along the Way. But, as God would have it, he looked sorrowfully down under the

bench and there his eyes fixed upon his precious Treasure!

Who can imagine the joy that flooded his soul? For this was the Assurance of his Life and the Acceptance at the desired Haven. Therefore, he carefully placed it in his Garment with a thousand thanks to Him who dwells on High.

By the time he reached again the top of the Hill, darkness had begun to settle upon the land. Then, into his mind, came thoughts of the Lions spoken of by *Timorous* and *Mistrust*. "These Beasts roam in the night seeking their prey. How shall I escape their claws and jaws?"

It was just then that he entered a narrower passage and through the gloom ahead he saw them; two Lions on either side of the Way. (Now the Lions were chained, but he did not see the chains). He therefore came to a halt and feared to go forward lest he be torn to pieces. He even thought of turning and fleeing as did the other two.

Just then the *Porter* of a very magnificent Palace which lay just beyond the Lions called out to him, "Is your Strength so small? Fear not the Lions, for they are chained. They are placed there for the Trial of Faith for those who have it and for the Discovery of those who have none. Keep in the midst of the Path, and no harm shall come upon you."

So he went on trembling for fear of the Lions and their terrible roaring, staying, as he was directed, in the midst of the Way. Indeed, he got safely by them and clapped his hands in joy, relief, and victory over these mighty ones [Jas.1:2-4].

*Difficulty is behind, Fear is before,  
Though he's left the Hill, the Lions do roar.  
A Christian man is never long at Ease:  
When one fright is gone, another's there to seize.*

# 6

## PALACE BEAUTIFUL

*Christian* now made haste to inquire of the *Porter* if he might find lodging for the night therein. So the good man asked from where he came, where he was going, and why he arrived at such a late hour and listened while *Christian* told his tale. Then said *Watchful* (for that was his name), "I will call for one of the Virgins of the Palace who will, if she likes your Talk, bring you in to the rest of the Family."

So he rang the bell and presently there came forth a maiden, both sober of mind and beautiful to behold, whose name was *Discretion*. She listened as he related his experiences in the Way up to this point and smiled though the tears came to her eyes. After a little pause she said, "I will call two or three more of the Family to greet you." She then ran to the door and called for *Prudence*, *Piety*, and *Charity* who, after some further discussion with him, welcomed him into the Family.

Many did gather at the Threshold of the Palace saying, "Come in, Blessed of the Lord; this House was built by the Lord of the Hill to entertain such Pilgrims as you upon the Way." *Christian* did bow himself low with humility for the kindness shown and entered into their midst with joy.

Until Supper was prepared, the Family did appoint *Piety*, *Prudence*, and *Charity* to converse with him. And so *Piety* began by asking him many particulars of his Journey thus far that they might be better acquainted with him. Then did *Christian* give a full account of how he got into the Way with all the Blessings, Dangers, and Snares along with profitable Lessons he had encountered, concluding with hearty thanks for

their kind reception of him.

Then *Prudence* (being very wise) thought it good to ask him, "Do you not think sometimes of that Country from where you came?"

*Chr.* "Yes, but with much Shame and Detesting: Truly, if I had been mindful of that Country from where I came, I might have had opportunity to return there; but now I desire a better Country, that is, a Heavenly one" [Heb.11:15, 16].

*Prud.* "Did you not carry away with you some of the things that you were accustomed to in that Place?"

*Chr.* "Yes, but greatly against my will. Especially my inward and carnal Reasoning which I once delighted in but now is grief to me. And if I could choose my own things, I would desire to never think of those things again."

*Prud.* "But are there not times when Victory seems to be gained over these?"

*Chr.* "Yes, but not often enough. I wish it were more so."

*Prud.* "How is it that you find Rescue from the troubling of your own Flesh?"

*Chr.* "It is truly when I think of what I saw at the Cross or when I look upon the fine linen Garment provided for me there. Also, meditating upon my Testament does deliver me, as well as sincere longing to arrive at Mount Zion."

*Prud.* "And what is it that makes you so desirous to go there?"

*Chr.* "Why, I hope to see Him alive that did once hang dead upon the Cross for me. For, I tell you the truth, I love Him because by Him I was released from my Burden. And besides these things, I am weary of my inward Sickness and desire to be with that great Company who never cease to cry, 'Holy, Holy, Holy,' where Sin and Death are no more."

At this, she smiled upon him with satisfaction and gave place to *Charity* who desired to inquire further about his family.

*Char.* "Tell us about your family, did they not come with you?"

*Chr.* Then he wept and sobbed, "O, how willingly I would have brought them, but they all were utterly against my going on Pilgrimage!"

*Char.* "But did you not endeavor to show them the Dangers

awaiting them in that condemned Place?”

*Chr.* “I did, indeed, but I seemed to them as if I was joking [Gen.19:14]. Many times I would earnestly Pray that the Lord would be pleased to open their eyes. But they would not hear. You must know that my Wife and poor Children are very dear to me.”

*Char.* “But what reason did they give for not coming with you?”

*Chr.* “Why, my Wife was afraid of losing the World and my Children were given over to the foolish Delights of Youth. Though my own life has little to commend it, it was my sincere desire to see them walk in the Way of Truth.”

*Char.* “Indeed, *Cain* hated his brother because his deeds were Evil and those of his brother’s were Righteous [I Jn.3:12]. If they would not be persuaded by your Words, Prayers, and Manner of Life, then we can but continue to commit them into the hands of Him who does all things well. In this you have delivered your soul from their Blood” [Ezk.3:19].

Having said these things, they all fell silent for a brief space reflecting upon the mystery of the hardening of a Sinner’s heart which was only interrupted by the sighs and prayers that could be heard from *Christian’s* lips.

# 7

## CHRISTIANNA, CHILDREN, & MERCY

Now, we must leave our story of the good *Christian* for the moment, to relate how wondrously God did accomplish His Good Pleasure in the heart of *Christian’s* Wife and dear Children. Spiritual progress on the Pilgrim Way is by starts and stages, beginning within, unseen by the eye of man. It is thus that it was in *Christianna*.

We must not suppose that good *Christian* had left his family without Husband and Father. No, indeed, he continued to care for their daily necessities while abiding with them under the same roof. Nothing less would qualify one as making a claim to Godliness [I Tim.5:8].

Truly he was in the World, but not of it, while bearing the hatred of his own Dear Ones who yet dwelt therein [Jn.17:14-16]. He did not leave them as to the things of this life, but had truly left Wife and Children for the sake of the Gospel [Lk.18:29, 30]. So, while *Christian* had gone some distance towards the Heavenly City, thinking that there were no movements in the heart of his Wife, strange and wonderful workings were occurring in her soul, though unknown to him. And this is how it came about.

When kindness is returned for reviling and goodness for evil, disturbing distress churns within the hardhearted . Guilt and Shame begin to break up the resistance which before was so strong. A Distance developed between the Man and his Wife now that they no longer walked the Broad Way together. This sorely pricked her womanly soul and stirred her natural affections. In short, all of her unkind, unnatural, and ungodly behavior towards her dear Husband came like swarms into her

mind. It tormented her Conscience hotly and loaded her soul with smoldering Guilt.

Like a Flash of Lightening to her remembrance came all of her Husband's tears, pleadings, and self-denials for her and her Sons. All these things pressed heavily upon her, especially his Words of Warning from his Book. Ringing in her ears day and night was his bitter outcry, "What must I do to be saved?"

The day therefore came when she called her Children to her side saying, "Sons, we are all undone! I have sinned against your Father, I refused to go with him, and I have hindered you from the Way of Life." With that, the Children lifted up their voices and wept, crying, "Let us arise and go, dear Mother. O, let us not delay."

*Channa*. "O, woe is the day! If I had only listened to the voice of my dear Husband! Now I and my Children are almost in utter ruin because of hating His Instruction [Prov.5:11-14]. I heard the Promise of entering His Rest, but now I fear because that Word did not profit me by reason of my Hardness of Heart! [Heb.4:1, 2]. O, what shall become of us now?" And with that, they all fell into weeping afresh most miserably.

That night, as God would have it, *Christianna* had a dream, and behold, a wide Scroll was opened before her in which was recorded the sum of her ways. The crimes noted therein appeared very dark and threatening upon her [Zech.5:1-4]. Then she cried aloud in her sleep, "Lord, have Mercy upon me, a Sinner" [Lk.18:13]; and the little Children heard her.

After this, two very evil looking Ones stood by her bed-side saying, "What shall we do with this Woman? For she cries out for Mercy waking and sleeping. If she is permitted to go on like this, we shall lose her as we have her Husband!"

Now she woke up in a great sweat and trembled exceedingly. She lay this way for some time in an anguish of soul until she drifted off again into a fitful sleep. It was then that she dreamed of *Christian* whom she imagined she saw in a place of Bliss among countless Souls, all Immortal, who constantly did raise a chorus of Joy to Him who sat upon the Throne with a Rainbow about His head [Rev.4:2, 3, 5:11, 12].

In the morning, the visions of the night would not give her rest

of mind so she prayed to God and related them somewhat to the Children when one knocked hard at the door.

*Channa*. "If you come in God's name, come in." And he who was without replied, "Amen. Peace be to this house," and then entered and continued, "*Christianna*, do you know where I am from and why I am here?" Upon hearing this, she blushed and trembled with warm desires surging through her heart to know his errand.

"My name is *Secret*, and I dwell with those on High [Ps.91:1; Ps.25:14]. The report has come to Us that you have repented of the Evil of your ways against your Husband and of Hardening your Heart against the Way of Pilgrims and of keeping your Children in their Ignorance. *Christianna*, The Merciful One has sent me to tell you that He is a God ready to Forgive, and that He takes Delight to multiply Pardon for your offences [Isa.55:7]. Moreover, He invites you into His Presence, to His Table of Abundance forevermore" [S. of S. 2:4; Isa.25:6].

Overcome with wonder, she bowed herself to the ground as he continued, "*Christianna*, here is also a Letter for you, which I have brought from your Husband's King."

It's odor was of the best Perfume [S. of S. 1:11, 12] and was inscribed with Letters of Gold whose contents were as follows; "The King desires you to do as your Husband did, for this is the Way to My City, and to dwell in My Presence with Joy forever. The Spirit and the Bride say 'Come.' And let the one who Hears say, 'Come.' And let the one who is Thirsty, Come; let the One who wishes, take the water of Life without cost" [Rev.22:17].

The Good Woman nearly fainted at the News but cried out to her Visitor, "Sir, will you carry me and my Children with you, that we also may go and worship this King?"

*Secret* "*Christianna*, the Bitter is before the Sweet. You must pass through Troubles, as has your Husband, before you may enter the Heavenly City [Acts 14:22]. Therefore you must also walk in the Way unto the Narrow Gate where it will be told you what you must do. Do not neglect to read the Letter in your hand, for it is one of the Songs that you must sing while you are in this House of your Pilgrimage" [Ps.119:54].

Having said all, he excused himself to return to Him who sent

him. Now did the tears of Joy gush from their eyes at the glad prospect before them of joining their Beloved in the Way. All preparations were immediately made for a hasty, though prudent, departure from their City of Destruction.

But while they were about to be gone, two of her neighbors came to visit and knocked at the door, to whom she said as she did before, "If you come in God's name, come in." Upon hearing this, the women were quite stunned as *Christianna* had never spoken so before.

Therefore their amazement increased when they entered and found them packed for the Journey. The eldest of them, *Mrs. Timorous* by name, being the wife of him who would have put fear into *Christian*, exclaimed, "Where do you think you are going?"

*Channa*. "To go after my Good Husband on the Way to the Heavenly City." And with that, she did begin to weep again.

*Tim*. "What! And endanger both yourself and these poor Children with untold terrors? No, neighbor, it shall not be. You cannot run the risk of soul and body for that which you have never seen and at which you may never arrive."

*Channa*. "Do not say what you do not know, Dear Neighbor, I have assurances from the Prince of the Way that He desires me to come to His Dwelling with Promise of His Welcome at the end of my Journey. He sent His Messenger here this very morning with this Letter for me," which she then pulled out and read to them.

*Tim*. "O, the Madness that has possessed you and your Husband! How can you be so foolish to cast away not only yourself, but these, your sweet Babes?"

*Channa*. "Do not tempt me, my neighbor, I have set my hand to the plow and cannot look back [Lk.9:62]. He is no fool who gives what he cannot keep to gain what he cannot lose [Mt.16:25, 26]. And as for the Troubles you made mention of, they are no Discouragement to me but rather Assurance that I am on the Right Way. The Bitter must come before the Sweet which will only make the Sweet that much Sweeter. So, since you did not enter my house in God's name as I said, please be gone and trouble me no further."

So she reviled her and arose looking rather offended, saying,

"Come, neighbor *Mercy*, let's leave her to her own folly since she despises our counsel."

But *Christianna's* Words had so worked within *Mercy's* soul, creating a desire to accompany the Good Woman on the Way, that she ventured to say that she would walk with her at least part way along her Path to keep her company.

*Tim*. "Well, I see you have a mind to be a fool too. But take heed in time and be wise; while we are out of danger, we are out; but when we are in, we are in!" And with that, she briskly left them and went to join her own companions where she and they further slandered and talked nonsense of them all.

By that time *Christianna* along with her Children and *Mercy* had gotten out of the City and were in the Way to the Gate. It was then that *Mercy*, being young and somehow shy, did say, "If I thought that I might go along with you and be accepted in the Way, I would never go near that Town again."

This brought gladness to *Christianna* and she spoke with great encouragement to her heart, "*Mercy*, dear, do come with me! I know very well what shall meet us at the end of our Pilgrimage. The King who sent for me is One who delights in *Mercy* [Mic.7:18, 19]. Come with me to the Blessed Gate, He will surely not turn away any who come unto Him there."

And so *Christianna's* words comforted her fears and she agreed to join her with Hopes of Eternal Life of which she did sing:

*Let the most Blessed be my Guide,  
If it be His blessed Will,  
Unto His Gate, into His Fold,  
Up to his Holy Hill:*

*And let Him never allow me  
To swerve or turn aside  
From His Free Grace, and Holy Ways,  
Whatever may come or abide.*

And let Him gather those of mine,  
That I have left behind;  
Lord, make them pray they may be Thine,  
With all their Heart and mind.

## 8

### THE SLOUGH, GATE, & EVIL ONES

In short time they came to the border of that miry marsh into which *Christian* did descend along with *Pliable* and there they stood, not knowing how to proceed. For the place was worse than before because many, pretending to be the King's Laborers, brought dirt and dung rather than stones and threw them therein. It was *Mercy* who encouraged the others finally by saying, "Come, let us cross over, only let us look well to our feet that we might not miss the Steps."

With great caution, therefore, did they venture to the other bank, sometimes with a slip or staggering a bit, but at last, making it safely across. Now as soon as they were safe on the other side they thought they heard a Voice saying, "Blessed is she that believes, for there shall be a Performance of the things that have been told her from the Lord" [Lk.1:45].

With no further difficulty they made their way to the Gate and, after discussion, determined that *Christianna* should be the one to approach the Gate in their behalf. So she did begin to Knock and Knock again as did her Husband before her.

Then they heard a horrible and violent barking of a great Dog come rushing up seemingly to the inside of that Gate which they wished to enter. For a while she no more Knocked for fear that the Dog might leap upon them terribly should the Gate be opened.

Then they did not know what to do. To continue to Knock seemed to be certain danger and to turn and flee would surely offend the Gatekeeper. At last, it was decided that to continue to Knock was their only Hope so that was done even more forcefully than at first. Then said the Gatekeeper, "Who is there?" And when he had said this, the Dog left off his barking and the Gate was opened unto them.

Then *Christianna* prostrated low before Him with these words, “Let not our Lord be offended with his hand-maidens that we have Knocked at His princely Gate.”

When He had heard from where they had come and what they Desired, He took her by the hand and let her in, saying, “Let the little Children come unto Me” [Lk.18:16]. He then brought them in and closed the Gate with instructions that the Trumpeter above should welcome them with Trumpeting of Joy and the air was filled with his melodious notes.

Now all this while poor *Mercy* stood without, trembling and crying, for fear that she was rejected. But when *Christianna* had gotten inside, she began to make intercession for her to the Prince. Each minute seemed like an hour to the anxious Maiden without who, being greatly fearful, began to Knock most loudly.

Then was the Gate opened to her, but she had fainted [Ps.119:81] and fallen to the earth. She was looked upon with Pity by the Lord who met her there and raised her by the hand, saying, “Maiden, fear not, but arise and enter according to the Sure Word as it is written, ‘When my soul fainted within me, I remembered the Lord, and my Prayer came in unto Thee, into Thy Holy Temple’” [Jonah 2:7].

*Mercy* “My Lord, I have come, though not by Invitation as my friend, *Christianna*, has. But, I beg, if there is any Grace and Forgiveness to spare that might wash away my Sins, I do humbly ask that Your poor hand-maiden might be made a partaker.”

Gently was she then led in by the hand and kindly received by the Lord of the Way, saying, “I grant Pardon by Word and by Deed; by Word in the Promise of Forgiveness and by Deed in the Way I obtained it [Jn.20:20]. Take the first from My lips with a Kiss [S.of S.1:2] and come up here and see afar off that which you shall soon know better.”

So He had them stand atop the Gate where they could see in the distance that Cross of Calvary which did so much bless and relieve dear *Christian*. At this sight they were elated beyond measure and did Praise Him who suffered therein to purchase their souls.

When they had descended, *Mercy* fell at His feet and said, “Let my Lord accept the Sacrifice of Praise, even the fruit of my lips which give

Thanks to Your Name” [Heb.13:15]. She continued upon her face and declared, “You are Righteous, O Lord, when I plead with You, yet let me talk with You of Your Judgments” [Jer.12:1, 2].

His kindly nod encouraged her to gather courage and venture to ask (though she blushed as she did) why such a vicious Dog was kept by Him in His yard.

He answered, “That Dog has another Owner and is kept in his compound opposite this wall, though My Pilgrim’s hear his Bark and ferocious Roaring. Indeed, he who keeps him (being My Enemy) does so out of no goodwill to Me and to keep Seekers of Life from entering at the Gate. Yet I always give My own Purchased Ones timely help so they are not delivered over to the power of the Dog [Ps.22:20, 21]. And why, My Darling Maiden, should a Dog in another man’s yard, whose Barking I turn to profit for My Own, keep any from coming to Me?”

*Mercy* “My Lord, I confess my Ignorance of Your Ways which are ever good. I spoke what I did not understand and acknowledge that You do all things well” [Job 42:2, 3; Mk.7:37].

He appeared pleased that His Word was received to her heart and lifted her up to stand before Him. So He fed them [Jn.6:35, 51], and washed their feet [Jn.13:5, 10], and set them in the Way of His steps as He had done for *Christian* before. Then did *Christianna* begin to sing:

*Blessed be the Day that I began  
A Pilgrim so to be;  
And blessed also be that Man  
That there unto moved me.*

*'Tis true, 'twas long before I began  
To seek to live Forever:  
But now I run as fast as I can;  
'Tis better late, than Never.*

*Our Tears to Joy, our Fears to Faith,  
Are turned as we see;  
Thus our Beginning (as one says)*

*Shows what our End will be.*

Now I saw in my dream that as they walked along the Way they passed by a garden which grew on the side of the Wall belonging to the Owner of the Dog. Some of the boughs of his trees hung over the Wall laden with fruit which did greatly appeal to the Boys. So, as boys usually do, they began to pick the fruit and eat.

When she saw what was happening, *Christianna* did reprove them severely for their Trespass, but they continued to eat one or two more before leaving off their thoughtlessness. Had she known that they belonged to the Enemy of their souls, I dare say she would have been ready to die of Fear.

It was just then that two Evil looking Ones came down the Path in their direction. *Christianna* and *Mercy* quickly covered themselves with their veils and kept themselves to their Journey. The men, however, continued to make their approach unto the Women and came close so as to embrace them.

*Channa*. “Stand back, or go peaceably by as you should!” [Ps.119:115].

But the Two, as men that are deaf, began to lay hands upon them which caused a great Resistance and struggle on the part of the Women while the Men did say, “We do not want your money, it is your Person that we desire!”

*Channa*. “Ah, you would have us Body and Soul! We will neither hear nor yield to what you demand! We will rather die on the spot than be Spoiled by you and cast away our Well-being hereafter.” And having said this, both of the Women shrieked in alarm, crying, “Murder! Murder!” and thus put themselves under those Laws provided for the protection of Women [Deut.22:23, 26, 27]. But the Two still made their attempts upon them and they cried out the more.

Now, since they were not far from the Gate, their Cries were heard by the *Reliever* who did speedily come to their Rescue. So boldly did he assault the Two, that they hastily flung themselves over the Wall into the Castle yard of the Owner of the Dog and thus escaped.

Though shaken and frightened, they suffered no real other harm

and expressed their thanks to the Prince for hearing their Voice and sending His Relief. Having calmed down a bit after the ordeal, *Reliever* did question them, “I am amazed, since you are but weak Women, that you did not ask the Lord to provide you with a Conductor so as to avoid these troubles. He surely would have granted you one.”

*Channa*. “O, we were so overcome with our Present blessing, that Dangers to come did not even enter our minds. Besides, who would have thought that such Evil Ones could be found so near the Gate? [I Cor.10:12; Mt.26:41]. I wonder, that since our Lord knew that it would be good for us to have such an Escort, why He did not provide one?”

*Reliever* “It is not always necessary to grant things not asked for lest they be counted as of little value in your sight. He has told us, ‘You do not have because you do not ask.’ [Jas.4:2]. So you must learn by this to always request from your Lord those needs you are aware of and for that Help He knows is best due to your Weakness and Ignorance.”

*Channa*. “Shall we go back again to my Lord and ask from Him a Conductor for our Safety?”

*Reliever* “Your confession of your folly I will present to Him. Go ahead, in all places you will find no lack in the Lord’s supply against all attempts to spoil you [I Cor.10:13]. But, as I said, He will need to be requested to do it for you; and it is a poor thing that is not worth asking for” [Ezk.36:37]. Having said these parting words, he returned to his place and they went on their Way.

*Mercy* “We have cause to thank the Lord in this, dear friend. By this we have seen our own Imperfections and the showing of the Riches of His Grace in Delivering us from the hands of those who were stronger than we. We are of Women most Blessed.”

Thus they proceeded onward; more Humbled, increasingly Watchful, and deeply Grateful for multiplied Kindness bestowed by the Lord of the Way.

# 9

## INTERPRETER'S HOUSE

Shortly they drew near to a fine Dwelling which stood in the Way into which *Christian* had entered and was so benefitted by what he was shown there. As they came close to the door, they thought that they heard those within mentioning *Christianna* by name, for indeed the Fame of her Pilgrimage had now become known beyond the City she had left.

They were all greatly surprised and embarrassed to hear those within commending her Journey as they did. This both encouraged and humbled them, but did strengthen them to approach the Door and knock.

A fair Maiden, *Innocent* by name, attended to them and learned who they were and from where they had come. Immediately she ran to those within exclaiming, "Can you imagine! At the Door is this very *Christianna*, her Children, and her Companion, *Mercy*!" At this news they did all leap for Joy and quickly told their Master who came and looked upon her with Gladness.

*Interpreter* "Are you that *Christianna* whom *Christian* the good man left behind when he began his Pilgrim's life?"

*Channa*. "I am indeed that hard-hearted woman who did both mock and discourage my dear Husband and persuaded my Children to neglect their Souls. But now I am come, for I am convinced that there is no Right Way but this."

*Interp.* "Then is that fulfilled which is written of the man who sent his son to work in the vineyard who said, 'I will not,' but later

repented and went" [Mt.21:29].

*Channa*. "So be it. Amen. May God make it a true saying of me and grant that I may be found at last by Him, Blameless and in Peace."

Then they were ushered in and welcomed most graciously by all the household who all rejoiced exceedingly over their Guests. After a refreshing rest and conversation with one and all, the *Interpreter* brought them into the rooms which did so much profit *Christian* and showed them the things there for their own Progress in the Way. And, since supper was not yet ready, he took them into other of his Significant Rooms to reveal further unto them.

In the first they met a Man who could look no way but downwards with a Muckrake in his hand. Above his head stood One with a Heavenly Crown in his hand which he offered in exchange for his rake. But the Man neither looked up nor regarded the Offer, but continuously raked to himself straws, muck, dung, and sticks.

*Channa*. "Ah! I think I know something of the meaning of this. This is to show us the mind of a man of this World: Is it not, good Sir?"

*Interp.* "You have rightly seen the sense. Many of this World consider the Things Above to be a mere Fable and so they set their minds on the things Below and not those of Christ" [Col.3:1-3].

*Channa*. "O! Deliver me from this Muckrake!"

*Interp.* "That Prayer has been left unused 'til it is almost rusty. 'Give me not Riches,' [Prov.30:8] is hardly the prayer of one in ten thousand." Upon hearing that, the Two Women wept and said, "It is, Alas! Too true."

Next he led them into the very best room in the house and asked them to look around to see if they could find anything profitable there. Then they looked round and round; for there was nothing but a very great Spider upon the wall which they both overlooked.

*Mercy* "I see nothing, good Sir."

*Interp.* "Look again." And so she did.

*Mercy* "There is not anything but an ugly spider, who hangs by her hands upon the wall."

*Interp.* "Is there but one spider in all this spacious room?"

Then did tears spill over from *Christianna's* eyes, for she was a

woman of quick Understanding, and replied, “Yes, Lord, there is here more than one. Yes, and Spiders, whose venom is far more destructive than her own.”

At this answer, the *Interpreter* looked pleasantly upon her and said, “You have spoken the Truth.” This made *Mercy* to blush and the Boys to cover their faces; for they all began now to understand the riddle.

*Interp.* “The Spider takes hold with her hands and is in King’s Palaces [Prov.30:28]. This is to show you that however full of Sin’s venom you may be, by Faith you can dwell in the best room of the King’s house above.”

*Channa.* “I could only imagine that we all looked like ugly creatures no matter what a fine room we might be in. I did not perceive this lesson of Faith but I do now see that God has made nothing in vain.”

Then they all seemed to be glad and looked at each other with tears in their eyes and also bowed before the *Interpreter* who smiled and led them to another room.

*Interp.* “See here this Hen and her chicks, how they do drink, lifting up their heads and eyes towards Heaven. Learn from them to acknowledge from where your mercies come, by receiving them with thanks, by looking up. Then again, see how she walks about and hear her voice; she has a Common Call throughout all the day, a Special Call occasionally, a Brooding note, and an Outcry.

“Now compare this Hen to your King [Mt.23:37; Ps.91:4], and these chickens to His obedient ones. By his Common call, He gives nothing; by His Special call He always has something to give; He has a Brooding voice for those who are under His Wings [Ruth 2:12]; and an Outcry to sound the alarm when the enemy approaches. I chose, my Darlings, to show you these because you are Women and they are easy for you to know their meaning.”

Since they desired to see yet more, He led them into the Slaughter-house where a Butcher was killing a sheep. And the sheep was quiet and took her death patiently. “You must learn of this sheep to suffer, and to put up with wrongs without murmuring and complaints. Behold how quietly she takes her death and allows her skin to be pulled

over her ears. Your King calls you His Sheep” [I Pet.2:19-23].

Into His Garden did they now come where a great variety of Flowers flourished under His care. As they gazed with admiration he said, “Behold, the Flowers are of differing size, color, quality, smell, and virtue; and some are better than others. And where the Gardener has placed them, there they stand and do not quarrel with one another” [S.of S. 4:12-14].

He then took them out into His Field where great portions had been carefully prepared and sowed with Good Seed, yet in the time of Harvest, no fruit was brought forth, only straw and stubble.

*Channa.* “There is nothing to be done with it but to deliver it over to be burned, for there is nothing of profit to Him who spent His labor on it.”

*Interp.* “You have rightly judged, My daughter. Fruit is that which is looked for, without which, One condemns it to the Fire. Beware that in this you do not condemn yourselves.”

As they were coming in from the Field, they beheld a lovely little bird, a Robin, whose breast feathers were a most pleasing red. He was all the more agreeable for his sociable nature and willingness to eat crumbs of bread from the Children’s hands. Just as they were about to proceed, the little bird flew quickly from them and caught a great Spider in its mouth and ate it down as easily as it had the Bread. This made them to rather dislike the little creature who once had so appealed to them.

*Interp.* “This Robin is show you that not all who appear to be lovely outwardly are inwardly the same. For there are many who love to associate with the Godly for the Crumbs gained from keeping their company who have an equal appetite for Spiders when apart by themselves. They are equally satisfied to change their diet, drink iniquity, and swallow down Sin like water.”

They then returned to the house and discovered that supper was not yet ready, so the Master set forth a series of Proverbs for their profit.

“The fatter the pig is, the more she desires the mire; the fatter the Ox is, the more sportive he goes to the slaughter; and the more healthy the Lusty man is, the more prone he is to Evil.

“There is a desire in Women to appear neat and fine; how much

more to be adorned with that which is precious in the sight of God [I Pet.3:3, 4].

“It is easier to Watch a night or two than to sit up an entire year; so it is easier to begin well than to endure to the end [Mt.24:13].

“One Leak will sink a Ship, and one Sin will destroy a Sinner.

“He who fondles his treasure will not build with Gold [Mt.6:19, 20].

“He who forgets his friend, is ungrateful unto him; but he who forgets his Savior is unmerciful to himself.

“He who lives in Sin, and looks for Happiness hereafter, is like him who sows Thorns and imagines to reap Wheat [Gal.6:7, 8].

“If a man would live well, let him keep his last day ever before him as his Companion.

“Whispering and change of thoughts proves that Sin is in the World.

“If the World which is despised by God as vanity is counted as a thing of worth in the eyes of men, what will be Heaven which God commends?

“The eye which gazes on the well-watered plain, will also behold it rise in smoke [Gen.13:10; 19:28].

“Salt is good if it be not a Pillar [Mk.9:50; Lk.17:32; Gen.19:26].

“If this life which is full of so many troubles is so unwillingly let go of by us, what must that Life above be?

“We seldom sit down at the table and eat with nothing remaining; so there is in Jesus Christ more Merit and Righteousness than the World has need of.”

One thing more he desired to show them before they dined, so he took them again into the Garden and showed them a Tree whose branches were full of leaves and trunk pleasant to the eye, but whose inside was rotten and eaten by insects. “This,” he explained, “represents those found in the Garden whose mouths speak finely in behalf of God but will do nothing for him; whose leaves are many, but their hearts good for nothing except to be fuel for the devil’s kindling-box” [Mk.7:6].

Supper now being ready, they all were seated and one gave thanks, after which the good things of His Table were passed one to

another. And, as was his custom, the Master had his musicians entertain them as they dined, one of whose Song sounded thus:

*The Lord is my only support,  
And He that does me feed;  
How can I then lack anything  
Whereof I stand in Need?*

Here he asked them further of how they had set out upon Pilgrimage and what had moved their hearts to walk in the Way. So *Christianna* related her tale followed by that of *Mercy* though she blushed and trembled to tell her own.

*Interp.* “*Christianna*, you have arisen, a Mother in Israel [Jud.5:7]. Your beginning is Good, your latter end shall greatly increase.” And she did cast her eyes down, covering herself with her veil, and bowed before him.

*Interp.* “*Mercy*, dear, your setting out is Good, for you have given credit to the Truth. You are a Ruth, who left Father and Mother and the place of her birth for the love she had for Naomi and to the Lord her God [Ruth 1:14-18], to come to a Place and a People whom she did not know. ‘May the Lord reward your work, and your wages be full from the Lord, the God of Israel, under whose Wings you have some to seek refuge’ [Ruth 2:12]. The hearing of this made *Mercy* shed tears of Joy and prostrate, veiled before him.

After a refreshing night’s rest, they prepared to continue on their Journey, but the Master said that they must go forth orderly and fitted for the Way. So the Maiden, *Innocent*, took them into the Garden where was a Bath that would make them Clean from the Soil gathered during their travel. They went and washed and came out, not only sweet and clean, but also much strengthened in their joints [I Cor.6:11; Tit.3:5, 6].

Next He fixed a Seal upon their foreheads which did greatly add to their beauty and make them look more like Angels, fair as the Moon [Ex.13:9; S.of S.6:10]. The Maiden also brought forth Garments of fine Linen, white and clean [Isa.61:10; Rev.19:8], which, when they were thus adorned, made them seem awesome to each other because of the Glory

which they saw in the other (though they could not see the Glory that was upon herself). Thus they began to esteem the other as better than themselves [Phil.2:3] which added that much more beauty to their persons.

Each were then handed a Mirror which He bid them look into very well and often along the Way. "In it you will see the Glory of Him who is your Prince, as well as discovering those imperfections in yourselves which you otherwise would not see" [2 Cor.3:17, 18; Jas.1:22-25].

One last provision was made in accordance with *Christianna's* previous request. The Master called for one of His Servants, *Great-heart*, by name, who was instructed to take his Sword, Helmet, and Shield [Eph.6:16, 17] and conduct them to the house called Beautiful where they were next to rest.

So he went before them as those who belonged to the Family and the *Interpreter* wished them God speed along with many kind words at their departure. They went on their Way, and sang:

*This place has been our second stage,  
Here we have heard, and seen  
Those good things, that from Age to Age  
To others hid have been.*

*The Dunghill-raker, Spider, Hen,  
The Chicken too, to me,  
Has taught a lesson, let me then  
Conformed to it be.*

*The Butcher, Garden, and the Field,  
The Robin, and his bait,  
Also the rotten Tree does yield  
Me argument of weight;*

*To move me for to Watch and Pray,  
To strive to be sincere;*

*To take up my Cross day by day,  
And serve the Lord with fear.*

*And let this Mirror be to me  
A Glass of glorious sight,  
To show my stain and set me free,  
And His blessed Face in Light.*

# 10

## THE CROSS, DIFFICULTY'S HILL, & GRIM

Upon coming to that place of the Cross where *Christian's* Burden did fall from his shoulders and disappear into the Tomb, they paused and blessed the name of the Lord. It was there that it came into *Christianna's* mind what they were told at the Gate; that their Pardon was obtained both by Word and by Deed.

*Channa*. "Mr. *Great-Heart*, I know something of what it means to be pardoned by Word, that is by the Promise, but what is it to be pardoned by Deed? Please, do help us to understand better."

*Great*. "Gladly. He who admitted you at the Gate is that same One who has Pardoned you by His one Act of Obedience upon the Cross [Rom.5:18]. There, He who knew no sin was made sin for us, that we might become the Righteousness of God in Him [2 Cor.5:21]. Now He is a Great and Marvelous Person with none His equal. For He is both truly God in all His fullness [Col.2:9], and at the same time, Perfect Man, Righteous in all respects [Jn.8:29]. Therefore, He could Satisfy the righteous Judgment of God against sinful men, since He had no sin of His own and was thus qualified to be a Substitute for those He suffered for. His Blood, shed under the wrath of God against Sin, satisfied all of God's Righteous requirements so that God now is both Just and a Justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus" [Rom.3:24-26].

*Channa*. "O, seeing this makes my heart ten times more lightened and joyous than before. It seems as if my own heart bleeds to

think that He bled for me! O, Thou Loving One! O, Thou Blessed One! You deserve to have me; You have bought me. You deserve to have me all; You have paid for me ten thousand times more than I am worth! O, *Mercy*, how I wish that your Father and Mother were here; yes, and *Mrs. Timorous* along with *Mrs. Wanton* as well. Surely their hearts would be affected! I am persuaded that neither the Fear of the one nor the Lusts of the other could prevent them from becoming Pilgrims too!"

*Great*. "You speak now in the warmth of your affections. Do you think that you will always feel and speak as you do now? Were there not many who stood around our Lord's Cross who rather mocked and scorned His suffering so? What you have, my Daughters, you have by reason of a Divine impression made upon your souls which not all partake of. Remember that the Hen, by her common call, gives nothing to her Chicks. This you therefore have by a Special Grace."

This Instruction and Correction they humbly received with thankfulness as they moved on from this blessed place with determination to glory in nothing else but the Cross they had seen [Gal.6:14]. Soon they came upon the spot where *Christian* met *Simple*, *Sloth*, and *Presumption* sound asleep. But since then they had been executed and their bodies left hanging as a Warning to all who would follow in their way.

Seeing the troubled questions reflected in their eyes, *Great-Heart* began to explain who they were and why they were left hanging there. "These men have been extremely wicked against the Lord of the Way and His Pilgrims. Many have they turned out of the Way by their words and deeds among whom were *No-heart*, *Linger-after-Lust*, and a young woman named *Dull*, to mention only a few. Besides, they brought an evil report against the Lord, saying that He was a Hard Task-Master [Mt.25:24-28]. They also brought an evil report against the Good Land [Num.13:31, 32] to where you are going and spoke evil against the Servants of the Most High. Furthermore, they called the Bread of God miserable food [Num.21:5], the Comforts of God's Children vain imaginations, and the Travels of Pilgrims as a Worthless Waste."

*Channa*. "If that is how they were, they will never be mourned by me. They have what they deserve."

*Mercy* "Yes, let them hang, and their names rot, and their Crimes

live forever against them. And she did turn this occasion into a song:

*Now then you three hang there, and be a Sign  
To all that shall against the Truth malign.  
And let him that comes after, fear this End,  
If unto Pilgrims he is not a Friend.  
And Thou, my Soul, of all such men beware,  
That unto Holiness are such a snare.*

Next they came to the Spring at the foot of the Hill Difficulty and found it dirtied by the feet of some who do not wish Pilgrims to quench their thirst there [Ezek.34:18]. But they put some into a Vessel sweet and good, and soon the dirt did settle to the bottom and they could drink of the King's good Water.

Here they also saw that the two Byways of *Formalist* and *Hypocrisy* had been stopped up with Chains, Posts, and a Ditch. Even so, footprints could be seen along each path.

*Channa*. "The Way of transgressors is hard" [Prov.13:15].

*Great*. "Even if any of the King's Servants call to them and Warn them of their peril, they will revile and proceed, saying, 'As for the Word that you have spoken to us in the name of the King, we will not listen to you; but we will certainly do whatever proceeds out of our own mouth' [Jer.44:16, 17], and so many have passed on and have perished."

*Channa*. "They are Idle; they do not wish to take pains. The Uphill Way is unpleasant to them: So it is fulfilled unto them as it is Written, 'The way of the Slothful Man is a Hedge of Thorns'" [Prov.15:19].

So up the Hill they went, though not without Difficulty which made them see that those who loved Ease rather than their Souls would certainly choose another way. *Christianna* began to pant, *Mercy* wished to stop and rest, and the smallest of the Children cried aloud. But their Guide encouraged them all to endure only just awhile farther when they should reach the Prince's Arbor. So he took the child by the hand and brought them to the place.

Gladly they took their rest there and *Mercy* sighed, "How sweet is Rest to them that labor [Mt.11:28]. But let us be alert, for I have heard

that this is where *Christian* slept and lost his Testament," to which they all agreed.

*Great*. "So boys, what do you think of Pilgrimage now?"

*James* "I remember what my mother told me, that the Way to Heaven is as a ladder and the Way to Hell is as down a hill. But I'd rather go up the ladder to Life than down the hill to Hell."

*Great*. "It is a truth, what your mother has told you. Good boy." And the little boy blushed.

*Channa*. "Come, let us refresh ourselves with the provisions given us by the good *Interpreter*. He has made us partakers of His Bounty because we have willingly become His companions. Sir, will you join us?"

*Great*. "You are going on Pilgrimage, and presently I will return to my home where I eat such every day. Share it among yourselves and then we shall soon be going for the day is drawing to a close."

So, after being much refreshed, they got up and the little boys went ahead of the group. But before they had taken many steps, *Christianna* realized that she had forgotten to take her bottle of refreshment with her from the arbor.

*Mercy* "I think this is a losing place. But, Sir, what is the cause of this?"

*Great*. "The cause is failure to Watch and be Sober even in places of Rest. If one sleeps when he ought to be awake and forgets when he ought to remember, he becomes a loser" [Mt.26:40, 41; I Thess.5:6].

It was not long until they reached that place where the Lions did guard the Path. At the sight of them, the boys were glad to hide behind their Guide because of their fear. At this, he smiled and said, "How now, my boys, do you love to go before when no danger approaches; and love to come behind as soon as the Lions appear?" [Prov.24:10].

With sword drawn, *Great-Heart* boldly made his approach upon the Lions with the women and children coming behind. Then there appeared a Giant, a slayer of Pilgrims, whose name was *Grim* for he was a savage and merciless enemy.

*Grim* "Halt, you trespassers! Should you go any further, you shall all be slain by my fierceness and that of the Lions!"

*Great*. "Stand aside, for these are on the King's Highway and go

at His command despite you and the Lions.” Now, in fact, because of his harsh and forbidding appearance and the terror of the Lions, the Way had lately become overgrown with grass and the Path less traveled.

*Channa*. “Though this Way has been nearly abandoned to travel upon By-Paths, yet it shall not be so today since I have arisen, a Mother in Israel!” [Jud.5:6, 7].

At this, *Grim* swore by the Lions that they should all turn aside or perish miserably and the Lions did roar fearfully to confirm his curse.

Without a further word, *Great-Heart* charged their opponent with mighty blows from the Sword in his hand which made the Giant stumble back and rage, “Will you slay me on my own ground?”

*Great*. “This is the King’s Highway that you and your Lions are standing in to your own destruction. But these women and children will stand firm in the Way by the strength of the Lord and the Power of His might.” And, with that, he fell to cutting and hacking with his Sword [Eph.6:10, 12, 17].

The first blow brought the Giant to his knees. With the second, he broke his helmet and the next cut off his right arm. Then the Giant roared so hideously that the women and children shook with fear though they were glad to see him helpless upon the ground. Their Guide showed no mercy to this wicked and Grim hindrance along the Way, but killed him outright with one final blow.

Therefore, when that hideous Giant, *Grim*, who put such fears and terrors into the hearts of Pilgrims was dead, Mr. *Great-Heart* spoke with assurance to them, saying, “Come now, and follow me, and no harm shall come to you because of the Lions.”

So they proceeded on, though the women trembled as they passed by them and the boys looked as if they would die. But they suffered no harm from the beasts and met with no further assaults ‘til at last they safely arrived at the Palace Beautiful.

# 11

## TWO ARE ONE

Now I saw that as they drew up to the Palace entrance, *Great-Heart* knocked at the door and the *Porter* replied, “Who goes there?”

*Great*. “It is I.”

Then the *Porter* immediately opened unto him for he knew his voice very well as he had often conducted Pilgrims to the place. “How now, Mr. *Great-Heart*, you are welcome indeed! Do come inside and stay the night with us.”

*Great*. “Thank you, no, my friend, I must return to my Lord tonight but these Travelers will gladly partake of the hospitality within.” And he did then present the women and children unto him and they greeted each other.

*Channa*. “O, Sir, must you go? I don’t know what we shall do without you on our Journey. You have been so faithful and loving to us and have rescued us from so many dangers and guided us with your wise counsel.”

*Mercy* “O that we might have your company until the end of the Way! We pray, be persuaded to go with us and help us!”

*Great*. “I am at my Lord’s command. If He shall appoint me to be your Guide all the way through, I will gladly do so. But here is where you failed at the first. You should have asked of Him to send me with you beyond what He granted and He would have willingly done so. Even so, I know that now He will be pleased to hear your request and I shall return within three days’ time. But for now, good *Christianna*, *Mercy*, and brave children, I must bid you farewell.”

The *Porter* then called for the maiden, *Humble-mind*, to inform the Family within that *Christianna*, the Wife of *Christian*, and her Children had arrived at the door on Pilgrimage. But, O, if you could have heard

the noise of Gladness there was upon hearing this news!

So they came in haste to admire their guests and receive them with a holy kiss, and said, "Welcome, you vessels of the Grace of God. We, your faithful Friends, do heartily Welcome you!" And they ushered them in with the ringing of bells and choruses of Joy so that the house was full of the Praises of Him who had led them thus far.

Now, you must remember that we left off our story of *Christian* at this very Palace in order to relate that of his Wife. Well, to return to that, it so happened by the Good Pleasure of God that this very man was seated in the parlor of this Palace at that very moment.

You can well imagine his surprise and curiosity when such a melodious celebration as this reached his ears from the other part of this great house. So, he inquired from one of the servants who passed his way what the occasion was for such rejoicing. The servant, whose name was *Say-well*, replied, "You soon shall know the reason. I will report your request to the Chief of the House."

Within moments, not only the Chief, but numerous jubilant members of the Family gathered eagerly around *Christian*; some sounding praises, others joyously weeping, all expectantly anticipating the awaiting introduction. The Chief took him by the hand and invited him within, saying, "Come, Beloved of the Lord, there is Someone here whom, I know, you will be glad to see."

*Christian*, now somewhat amazed at what was happening, followed his Host through the corridors with a rising Thrill within his breast as they neared the grand door of the formal sitting room. The Host swung the door open and said, "See who has come to join you on Pilgrimage."

Who can describe what transpired in the heart of that Man and his Wife at the first meeting of their eyes? The Family all held their breath in a holy hush as *Christian* stopped and simply gazed in wonder at his *Christianna* who had arisen, startled, to her feet with eyes soon brimming with tears.

For long seconds he stood speechless and looked first to his Wife and then to his dear Children and back again to his Beloved with a growing realization of what this all meant. Finally, he managed to

whisper, "Is this really you, the Darling of my bosom, my Dearest Wife, *Christianna*?"

With trembling lips of hopeful acceptance she managed to breathe out, "Yes, my Dear Husband, it is I, your very *Christianna*."

Then, as if slowly in a dream, he moved admiringly with wonderment to her side, gently caressed her cheek, and tenderly kissed her forehead, saying, "This is the Lord's doing and it is marvelous in our sight. For the King has visited us with His Sunrise from on High and accomplished Redemption for this my Wife, and these my Babes [Lk.1:68, 78]. Blessed be His Holy Name! Blessed be the Most High forever and ever! Let us rejoice and be glad for this Wife of mine was dead and now she lives! And these Babes of mine were lost and now they are found! Bring out the best robe and let them be clothed! Kill the fattened lamb and let us make merry and rejoice!" [Lk.15:20-24].

And, with that, the Musicians sounded their melody and the Family burst forth in Song while *Christian* and his family embraced and danced for Joy [Zeph.3:14, 15] amid loud choruses of, "Hallelujah! Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power and riches and wisdom and might and honor and glory and blessing for He has purchased these ones for God with His own Blood!" [Rev.5:12, 9].

Thus they were entertained by the Household with glad shouting and warm embraces and led to the places of honor where Garments fitting for the occasion were lovingly placed upon them which added to the festivity. The trumpeters continued to sound golden notes mingled with the sweetness of the harps while they rejoiced with joy unspeakable and full of glory [I Pet.1:8].

Preparations were well under way for the supper of the Lamb, for the members of the Family had heard through faithful messengers that *Christianna* and Children would soon arrive at the Palace. Soon they would partake together for the first time in that glad Memorial to feast upon the Lamb who had been slain for their Redemption [I Cor.11:23-26; Ex.12:7, 8, 11].

While the final items were being put into place, his Wife and Children prostrated before their Husband and Father, weeping over their former hardness of heart and evil treatment of him [I Cor.11:27-29]. But

the good man raised them up, saying, “My Dear Ones, do not mourn and weep, for this Day is holy to the Lord our God. Do not be grieved; arise, for the Joy of the Lord is your Strength” [Neh.8:9-12].

And so they all partook of the best of Suppers, along with *Mercy* and the Family of the House in the sweetest of Communion. O what holy joy possessed each heart with thankfulness overflowing to Him who loves His own to the uttermost [Jn.13:1].

All their talk at that Table was of the Lord of the Hill; what He had done and how He had done so. And by what they said, I perceived that He had been a great Warrior, and had fought with and slain him who had the power of Death [Heb.2:14, 15]. This He did with the Loss of much Blood which added only that much more Glory of Grace into all that He did on the Cross out of Love to poor Pilgrims.

They talked of how they had heard Him say that He would not dwell in Mount Zion alone, but would bring many Sons to Glory [Heb.2:10]. Indeed, He had made many Pilgrims into Princes, though by nature they were born as beggars from the dunghill [I Sam.2:8; Ps.113:7].

*Mercy* “Wonderful it is! Music in the house, music in the heart, and music in Heaven! And all for Joy to Him who sits at the right hand of the Majesty on High mingled with that Joy which descends from above over Joy at our coming thus!” [Zeph.3:17].

So they discoursed together till late at night; and after they had committed themselves to their Lord for Protection, they all retired to their rest. *Mercy* was led to the bed-chamber called Comfort while the boys were settled in the one known as Relief.

Peace was over the door of that into which *Christian* and his dear Wife entered where, undisturbed, they lay pillowed in that rest which passes all understanding [Phil.4:7]. Moments of silent bliss flowed gently one upon another as they, together, recounted in their hearts, the marvelous Grace of the Lord of the Hill. It was *Christian* who softly expressed with Wonder,

*Chr.* “O, how good and kind is our Lord to bless us so! I cannot take it all in. How wise are all His ways. How full of mercy and truth are all His paths [Ps.25:9, 10]. O my dear Wife, my cup surely runs over. And to think, He has led you in the Way to join me with one heart and

one soul. We are Blessed indeed!” He turned to lovingly look into her face and the warmth of a tear from her eye fell gently upon his hand.

*Channa.* “O, *Christian*, I am not worthy of the least of His mercies. I have sinned against Heaven and in your sight. I am not fit to be called His daughter or to be called your Wife. O, my dear Husband, can you ever forgive me for my wretched ways?”

*Chr.* “My Darling and Delight of my heart, do I forgive up to a thousand times? No, not a thousand only, but a thousand times a thousand; freely, fully, and with all my heart” [Gen.50:15-21]. And the good man also shed his own tears which mingled with her own. “You are altogether beautiful, my Darling, and there is no blemish in you” [S. of S. 4:7].

Relief of such a glad welcome with his loving embrace soothed the heart of this daughter of Sarah whose now gentle and quiet spirit testified of the Grace she had received more than any words could proclaim [I Pet.3:4-6]. And so they drifted off to refreshing sleep with a final prayer breathed out of full hearts.

In the morning, their window which faced the Sunrise, sent its warming beams upon the resting couple. They awakened with great contentment, singing to greet the dawn,

*Where are we now! Is this the Love and Care  
Of Jesus; for them that Pilgrims are,  
Thus to provide! That we should be forgiven,  
And dwell already the next door to Heaven!*

All equally arose refreshed and contented in the comforting care of their heavenly King. Soon they all gathered and greeted one another with a kiss of love and spoke of the welfare of their souls.

*Mercy* “A very sweet dream I had last night in my sleep. I sat alone where I grieved over the hardness of my heart. In a very short while many gathered around me, laughing, mocking, and abusing me for the sorrowing over my soul. With that, I lifted up my eyes to Him who alone can fly to our help and beheld One coming with Wings towards me [Mal.4:2].

“He came directly to me and said, ‘Mercy, what saddens you?’ When He had heard my complaint, He said, ‘Peace be unto you’; and He wiped the tears from my eyes. Then He brought out the best of Garments of Silver and Gold, put a Chain about my neck, Earrings in my ears, and a beautiful Crown upon my head [Ezk.16:1-14].

“Then He took me by the hand, saying, ‘Mercy, follow Me.’ So He went up, and I followed, till we came at a Golden Gate and were admitted within. He led me up to a Throne upon which One sat who said to me, ‘Welcome, Daughter.’ The place looked bright, like the Stars, or rather, like the Sun in its brilliance and it was then that I woke up full of Joy.”

*Channa.* “It was a good dream; and as you have found the first part to be true already, may He who has led you fulfill the second part as well. Indeed, God speaks once, yes twice, yet man does not perceive it; in a Dream, in a Vision of the night, when deep Sleep falls upon men, in slumbering upon the bed [Job 33:14, 15]. The Lord has blessed you, dear sister, with a wonderful foretaste of what He has promised for certain in His unchangeable Word.”

So the guests were taken on a tour of the Rare and Precious things of the House. They were first shown into the Study where the Records of greatest antiquity were kept. There they read the accounts of the Lord of the Hill, how He was the Son of the Ancient of Days by eternal generation [Dan.7:13, 14]. Here also were more fully recorded the Acts that He had done and the Victories He had won.

Also they were shown some of the worthy deeds that his servants had done: how they had subdued Kingdoms, accomplished Righteousness, obtained Promises, out of Weakness were made strong, and many more, which if I related all, time would fail me [Heb. 11:32-34].

Of great interest to the Pilgrims were the weapons of righteousness for the right hand and the left [2 Cor.6:7] which were employed by His Servants to accomplish mighty deeds. They were shown Moses’ Rod [Ex.4:2-5], the Hammer and nail of Jael [Jud.5:24-27], and the Pitchers, Trumpets, and Lamps of Gideon with which he scattered the armies of Midian [Jud.7:15-22].

The Sling and Stone of David by which he slew Goliath was also

observed [I Sam.17:45-51]. But the Sword with which their Lord will kill the Man of Sin in that final Day, more than anything, was fearfully admired by all [Rev.19:15-21].

This being done, *Prudence*, the Maiden of the Household graced with insight above the others, approached the Man and his Wife if she might be permitted to question the Children on spiritual matters. They were both quite willing for this to be done for the profit of one and all. And so she began.

*Pru.* “Come, *James*, can you tell me who made you?”

*Jas.* “God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.”

*Pru.* “Good boy. And can you tell me who saves you?”

*Jas.* “Why, the answer is one and the same as that of who made me.”

*Pru.* “Very good. But how does God the Father save you?”

*Jas.* “By His grace.”

*Pru.* “How does God the Son save you?”

*Jas.* “By His Righteousness, Death, Blood, and Life.”

*Pru.* “And how does God the Holy Spirit save you?”

*Jas.* “By His Illumination, by His Regeneration, and by His Preservation.”

She then turned to the Parents, saying, “You are to be commended in how you have brought up your Children. If the youngest among them can answer this way, I suppose I do not need to ask the rest these same questions. Then she said, “Come, *Joseph*, will you let me question you?”

*Jos.* “With all my heart, yes, Ma’am.”

*Pru.* “What is supposed by this word, ‘Saved?’”

*Jos.* “That Man, by Sin, has brought himself into a state of Captivity and Misery, and Guilt.”

*Pru.* “And what is supposed by his being saved by the Trinity?”

*Jos.* “That Sin is so great a mighty Tyrant and that its Corruption so very complete, that the Fullness of the Godhead alone can pull us out of its clutches. It also shows the greatness of His Goodness and Love in lifting us out of this miserable state.”

*Pru.* “What is God’s purpose in saving poor sinful men?”

*Jos.* “The glorifying of His Name, of His Grace, Justice, Truth, and Love, and the bringing of sinners to partake of this Glory to their everlasting Happiness” [2 Thess.2:14].

*Pru.* “Who are they that will be saved?”

*Jos.* “Those that accept His Salvation” [Rom.10:9, 10].

*Pru.* “Good boy, *Joseph*, you have been taught well and you have listened well to the instruction.” Then I saw that she turned to the next eldest whose name was *Samuel*.

*Pru.* “Come, my boy, let me ask you this, What is Heaven?”

*Sam.* “A Place and Condition most blessed because God and Christ are there.”

*Pru.* “And what is Hell?”

*Sam.* “A Place and Condition most terrible, because those who dwell there are forever cast away from the Presence of God and abide in eternal torment therein.”

*Pru.* “Why would you desire to go to Heaven?”

*Sam.* “That I might see God and serve Him without weariness; that I may see Christ and love Him everlastingly; and that I might have that fullness of the Holy Spirit in me, that I cannot and do not possess and enjoy here.”

*Pru.* “A very good boy also who has learned well. Now, my dear *Matthew*, let me ask something of you as well. Has there ever been anything existing before God?”

*Matt.* “No, for God is Eternal; nor is there anything, except Himself, that existed until the beginning of the first day. For in six days the Lord made the Heavens and the Earth, the Sea, and all that is in them” [Ex.20:11].

*Pru.* “What do you think of the Bible?”

*Matt.* “It is the Holy Word of God, complete and Inspired by the Spirit of God throughout [2 Tim.3:16; 2 Pet.1:20, 21], which is forever settled in Heaven [Ps.119:89], and is our only Rule for life and godliness” [2 Pet.1:3, 4].

*Pru.* “But are there not things written therein that you do not understand?”

*Matt.* “Yes, a great many things” [2 Pet.3:15, 16].

*Pru.* “What do you do when you meet with things you do not understand?”

*Matt.* “I first of all bless the Lord that He is wiser than I. I then pray that He might open my eyes that I might behold wondrous things from His law which might be for my profit and His glory” [Ps.119:18].

*Pru.* “You have answered truly, my good *Matthew*. And now I say to all of you Children, that you listen diligently to that good and wholesome Doctrine which has been taught to you by your Father and Mother. They have yet many more things to reveal to you which, if you take heed to them, will set your feet in that good and Straight Way which you have begun to travel.”

Now I must make mention of a visitor to this beautiful Palace who had come more than once in the hopes of befriending *Mercy*. He was, by name, *Mr. Brisk*, who pretended to be a Pilgrim, but actually stuck closely to the World.

Her Mind was to always be busy for the good and welfare of others, never taking thought for herself as she continued in deeds of *Mercy* day and night. Well, this Pretender observed her industriousness and that the garments made by her hands were daily disposed of. He, of course, imagined that she sold all and had made some sizable amount for her efforts. “This,” he thought, “will make a fine wife for me who will make me comfortable all my days.” So, he approached her in this way.

*Brisk* “How now, fair *Mercy*, I so much admire your diligent labors. It is truly a commendable quality. And, how much, may I ask, are you able to make as wages in a day?”

At this, poor *Mercy* was somewhat confused at first, but she soon discerned his true intention and replied, “I do these things, not for my own gain, but for the good of the poor and needy to whom I freely give, that I might be rich in good works, laying up a treasure of a good Foundation for the future in order that I might take hold of Eternal Life” [1 Tim.6:17-19].

Upon hearing this, he began to look somehow ill and hastened to excuse himself upon pretense of some urgent business. As he passed by he was heard to mutter, “*Mercy* is a pretty maid, ‘tis true, but her head is filled with strange ideas which don’t suit well with my own at all!” And,

in fact, he was never seen around those parts again.

*Pru.* “You did well, dear *Mercy*, to do as you have done and speak plainly to him. It is one of the graces of Pilgrims to be speaking the truth in love to one and all [Eph.4:15]. As for him, and all pretenders to Religion like him, he will broadcast an evil report of you as they do of all who love and practice the truth.”

*Mercy* “Let them say so. Neither my Lord nor the poor will speak evil of me for doing as I have done. For He has said that the one who is gracious to a poor man, lends to the Lord and He will repay him [Prov.19:17]. His wages are true Riches. I will rather wait for my God to reward my labors.”

Thus their day was occupied with many profitable discussions and lessons gained from their stay in the House. The following morning after their morning meditation on the Words of the King and having taken their breakfast together, *Christian* strolled out towards the Gate and there met the *Porter*.

*Chr.* “Greetings, good *Porter*, we are all so very happy to be here in this most beautiful Palace. I think that every Pilgrim would greatly profit by a stay here with you all.”

*Port.* “May the Lord bless you, dear *Christian*. It is true that there are many good things to be gained by turning in here, though not all do. In fact, there went by the Gate early this morning a Pilgrim who was hastening to the Heavenly City and thought it best to continue on his Journey.”

This was a most interesting bit of news to *Christian* who eagerly asked, “Do you know him? Did he tell you his name?”

*Port.* “Yes, he said that his name was *Faithful*.”

*Chr.* “O, I know him very well. He is my near neighbor from the City of Destruction, a very close friend indeed. O, how glad I am that he too is on Pilgrimage! How far do you think he has gotten to by now? Could I yet meet up with him?”

*Port.* “By now he may likely have gotten below the Hill, but you may yet meet him if you will hasten on your Journey this morning.”

So, I saw that *Christian* quickly made his way back into the House and gathered his Wife and Children about him and reported to them the

news he had just heard.

*Channa.* “This is wonderful news, my Husband! How merciful is our God to have awakened our neighbor to his dreadful condition and of the coming doom upon our City. Will you try and meet up with him?”

*Chr.* “It would be such a blessing to all of us if we could. I know he would be very grateful and we would all benefit by each other’s fellowship along the Way. Come, let us be going and catch up with him before he proceeds far.”

*Channa.* “But what shall we do for Mr. *Great-Heart*? He promised to be here by tomorrow, being sent by the Lord of the Way to guide us along on the Journey. I don’t think we should all leave until he arrives, do you, Dear Husband?”

*Chr.* “No, we should not. This is the Lord’s kind provision for our benefit and comfort along the Way and we can surely not disregard or abandon it. This is what we shall do. You and the Children remain here in the company of these blessed Family members until Mr. *Great-Heart* arrives tomorrow. I will leave now in order to join *Faithful* along the Way. When Mr. *Great-Heart* comes, you can all leave together and meet up with us where we will be waiting for you so we can all continue in our Journey together.”

*Channa.* “It is well, my Husband. May the Lord speed your steps and may you meet our brother in Peace. May the Lord Himself keep you along the Way.”

So when they had made known their intentions to the Family, they thought it well and prepared to send *Christian* on his way with their blessing. First, they brought him into the Armory and provided him with Sword, Shield, Helmet, Breast-plate, All-Prayer, and Shoes which would not wear out [Eph.6:13-18]. This they did that he might be equipped against any assaults that he might meet with in the Way.

Following prayer and entrusting him into the hands of Him who does all things well, his brave Wife and loving Children each kissed him in turn with assurances of their prayers and their soon reunion in the will of their God.

# 12

## APOLLYON

It was thought best by the Family if certain among them should accompany *Christian* part way, to the foot of the Hill of Difficulty. At its base it enters into the Valley of Humiliation, and the going down is as dangerous as the going up. So *Discretion, Piety, Charity, and Prudence* went along with him, discussing many things of profit along the Way. Even so, careful as he was, he slipped once or twice but eventually reached the entrance to the Valley. There, his good companions bid him farewell after having given him a loaf of bread, a bottle of tonic, and sweet fruits.

*While Christian is among his godly friends,  
Their golden mouths make him sufficient mends  
For all his griefs; and when they let him go,  
He's clad with northern steel from top to toe.*

But now in this Valley of Humiliation, poor *Christian* was severely tried. He had not gone far when he saw a foul Fiend coming over the field to meet him whose name was *Apollyon*.

At the sight of him, *Christian*, began to be afraid and to consider whether he should best go back or stand his ground. Then it came into his mind that he had no Armor for his backside and so thought it best to stand his ground and face the Fiend [Eph.6:13].

Now the Monster was hideous to behold: He was clothed with scales like a fish (and they are his Pride), he had wings like a dragon, feet like a bear, and out of his belly came fire and smoke, and his mouth was as that of a lion [I Pet.5:8]. When he had come up before *Christian*, he looked upon him with contempt and scornfully questioned him.

*Apol.* "Where have you come from and where do you think you are going?"

*Chr.* "I am come from the City of Destruction which is the place of Evil and I am going to Mt. Zion."

*Apol.* "By this I can see that you are one of my subjects; for all that country is mine, and I am the Prince and god of it. How is it that you have rebelled against your king? If it were not that I hope that you will yet do me more service, I would strike you to the ground with one blow."

*Chr.* "I was indeed born in your Dominion, but your service was hard and your wages, Death [Rom.6:23]. So, when I saw that I must surely perish in that place, I left for a better Hope from that King whose reward is Eternal Life."

Now the Beast thought that Deceit might be the better way to persuade him so he approached him thus:

*Apol.* "Since you complain of your service and the wages received, do agree to return and I promise to give you what our Country will afford to its loyal subjects. Many who have gone forth from your City have regained their sense and returned to me again. Do the same, and all will be well."

*Chr.* "I testify to you that the Prince under whose Banner I now stand is infinitely Superior to you in every way! And besides, O you destroying *Apollyon*, I love His Service, His Wages, His Servants, His Government, His Company, and His Country. Therefore, no more try to deceive me. I am His servant, and I will follow Him!"

*Apol.* "Consider again what you will likely meet with on this way. His servants meet with untimely and evil ends because they have transgressed against me. He has never come out of His place to deliver any of His own out of my hands as I have come forth to deliver you out of His. As for me, I have delivered either by Power or Fraud all those who

have faithfully served me from His hands. And so I will deliver you as well.”

*Chr.* “His choice to not deliver His own from all present afflictions is but to test their Love unto the End. And their death is only their entrance into that Glory which has been prepared for them by their Prince” [Phil.1:20-23].

Now, perceiving that he was making no headway by this means, he employed another tactic which was well suited to his nature since he was that very Slanderer who continually accuses the servants of the Prince [Zech.3:1; Rev.12:10].

*Apol.* “How do you expect to be received by Him since you are a profitless and unfaithful servant? You were almost choked in the Slough of Despond. You tried to remove your burden against the directions of your Prince rather than waiting for Him to take it off. And what of your sinful sleep and careless loss of your Testament? And did you not halt and nearly turn back at the sight of the Lions? Furthermore, all that you speak of concerning your Journey, you do so to receive the praise and recognition of men and not for any supposed glory to your Prince.”

*Chr.* “All this is true, and much more besides. But the Prince I serve is plenteous in Mercy and ready to Forgive. Yet even while in your kingdom I drank in all these things like water. But now I have groaned under them, repented of them, and have obtained free and full Pardon from my Prince.”

Then *Apollyon* broke out into a grievous Rage and bellowed, “I am an Enemy to this Prince! I hate His Person, His Laws, and His People! I have therefore come out on purpose to oppose you!”

*Chr.* “*Apollyon*, beware what you do! For I am on the King’s Highway, the Way of Holiness; therefore take heed to yourself.”

Then the Monster spread himself quite over the whole width of the Way and cried, “I am free of fear in this matter; prepare yourself to die; for I swear by the Pit of Hell that you shall go no further: Here I will spill your soul!” And with that he threw a flaming Dart at his breast; but *Christian* raised his Shield and so escaped injury [Eph.6:16].

Quickly *Christian* drew his Sword and made his approach upon

the Fiend who, by now, was hurling Darts as fast and furious as he was able. *Christian* fended them off bravely as possible though, notwithstanding, he received wounds in the Head, Hand, and Foot. This made him fall back a little, while the Beast pressed upon him harder still. But *Christian* again took Courage, and resisted as manfully as he could.

This Combat lasted for more than half the day, till *Christian* was nearly exhausted due to the length of the Conflict and by reason of his Wounds. The Monster saw this and charged upon him, wrestling him to the ground with a dreadful Fall. And as he was slammed onto the earth, his sword flew out of his hand.

*Apollyon* now pressed upon him heavily, almost squeezing him to Death; so that the good Pilgrim began to despair of Life [2 Cor.1:8-10]. But, as God would have it, while *Apollyon* was about to land his final blow, *Christian* nimbly reached out his hand for his Sword, and grasped it, saying, “Rejoice not against me, O my Enemy! When I fall I shall arise!” [Mic.7:8]. And with that he gave him a deadly thrust, which made him draw back as one who had received a mortal wound. Seeing that, he lunged at him again, saying, “In all these things we are more than Conquerors, through Him who loved us” [Rom.8:37]. Then the Beast spread forth his Dragon’s wings and flew away, no more to be seen by *Christian* [Jas.4:7; Rev.12:11].

No man can imagine what yelling and hideous roaring *Apollyon* made all the time of the fight, raging like a Dragon and spewing forth blasphemies against the Prince of Pilgrims. On the other hand, sighs and groans burst forth from *Christian*’s heart unto Him who can save from Temptation and Death. I never saw him give even one pleasant look till he had wounded the Monster with his Two-edged Sword; then, indeed, he smiled and looked upward: But it was the most dreadful Fight that I ever saw.

*A more unequal Match can hardly be:  
Christian must fight an Angel; but you see  
The Valiant Man, by handling Sword and Shield,  
Did make him, though a Dragon, quit the field.*

So when the Battle was over, *Christian* knelt and gave Thanks to Him who had delivered him from the hand of his Adversary, saying,

*Great Beelzebub, the Captain of this Fiend,  
Designed my Ruin; therefore to this end  
He sent him harnessed out; and he with rage,  
That hellish was, did fiercely me engage:  
But my blessed Savior helped me, and I,  
By means of Sword, did quickly make him fly:  
Therefore to Him let me give lasting Praise,  
And Thank, and bless His holy Name always.*

# 13

## SICKNESS & LESSONS

Now I saw in my dream, that after *Christian* had departed from the Palace, his eldest son, *Matthew*, became terribly sick with horrible pains in his stomach. It so happened by the mercies of God that an ancient Physician of excellent reputation dwelt nearby. And at the suggestion of those in the House and with *Christianna's* approval, they immediately sent for him.

Within a very short time, this fine gentleman, *Mr. Skill* by name, arrived and examined the boy. It did not take long for him to arrive at his diagnosis.

*Skill* "This boy has been eating something unwholesome which lies undigested in his belly. And I tell you, unless he purges, he will surely die."

Then they all began to try and imagine what that might have been since they all had been eating the same thing. Finally, it was *Samuel* who recalled that he had taken of that fruit from the branches that hung over the Wall near the Gate at the beginning of the Way.

*Channa*. "True, my child, he did eat as you have said. I remember now that I reprov'd him but he ate nonetheless."

*Skill* "I knew that he had done so, and the fruit which you have mentioned is even the most harmful of all [Jer.2:17-19]. It is the fruit of *Beelzebub's* orchard. Many have died from it."

Then *Christianna* began to cry aloud, “O disobedient boy, and O careless Mother, what shall I do for my son?”

*Skill* “The boy must first purge and vomit and then he shall recover.” So he proceeded to mix a remedy made of the Blood of a Goat, the Ashes of a Heifer, and some other ancient ingredients [Heb.9:13, 14], but it was too weak [Rom.8:3]. So he proceeded to that which has never failed, made *Ex Carne & Sanguine Christi* (you know Physicians give medicines with strange names to their patients, this one, by translation, signifies, “From the Body and Blood of Christ”) [Jn.6:54-57]. It was made up into two pills, with a Promise or two, and a proper amount of Salt [Mk.9:50]. He was to take them with a measured amount of the tears of Repentance [2 Cor.7:10].

Yet, can you imagine, when the prescription was brought to the boy, he refused to take it though he was nearly being torn in two by his pains. “It goes against my stomach,” he groaned. The Doctor insisted that he must take it and looked to his Mother to implore him to do so.

*Channa*. “O, *Matthew*, these Pills are sweeter than honey. If you love your Father and Mother, if you love your Brothers, if you love Mercy, if you love Life, take it!”

So, by earnest Prayer, he was prevailed upon and yielded to the will of the Great Physician. He took it as Prescribed and it worked wondrously well, purged him of the poisonous fruit, and caused him to sleep with quiet rest.

*Channa*. “Good Sir, please make me up twelve boxes of these Pills, for there is nothing to compare with their Power to Cleanse and Restore.”

*Skill* “Gladly. These are effective to both prevent and to cure. And I will tell you the truth, if these will be used as they should, it will make one live forever. But they must only be used as I have prescribed or else they will do no good at all.” He then gave her request into her hand and bid them farewell with an affectionate smile.

Now *Matthew* had speedily recovered to the relief and gladness of all for which they bowed their heads with thanks to Him who alone can heal such maladies [Ps.41:4]. This grievous ailment and its wonderful Relief led him to inquire somewhat of *Prudence*.

*Matt*. “Why is it that generally the Doctor’s Prescription is bitter to our taste?”

*Pru*. “To show how unwelcome the Word of God and its effects are to a Carnal Heart.”

*Matt*. “Why does it cause us to Purge?”

*Pru*. “To show that the Word, when it works effectively within, cleanses the Heart and Mind.”

Being satisfied with this, he desired to understand other matters which he was unclear about. So, he proceeded to ask further, “What should we learn by seeing the flame of a fire go upwards, and the beams of the Sun strike downwards?”

*Pru*. “By the going up of the fire, we are taught to ascend to Heaven, by fervent and hot desires. By the Sun sending his beams, heat, and sweet influences downwards, we learn that the Savior of the World, though high, reaches down with His Grace and Love to us below.”

*Matt*. “Why do the clouds gather their water from the Sea and then empty themselves upon the Earth?”

*Pru*. “To show that Ministers should fetch their Doctrine from God and give what they have received from Him to the world.”

*Matt*. “What are we to learn by the Rainbow being caused by the Sun and Rain?”

*Pru*. “This tells us that God’s covenant of Grace is confirmed to us in Christ and that the Judgment which fell upon Him for our sins shall never be repeated.”

*Matt*. “Why do living springs of water come to us through the earth?”

*Pru*. “That we might know that the Grace of God comes to us through the Body of Christ.”

*Matt*. “Yet some springs rise out of the tops of high Hills.”

*Pru*. “This is to show that the Spirit of Grace can spring up even in some that are great and mighty, though mainly you will find the springs in the poor and lowly” [I Cor.1: 26-28].

*Matt*. “Why does the fire fasten upon the candlewick?”

*Pru*. “To show that unless Grace kindles upon the heart, there will be no true Light of Life in us.”

Matt. "Why is the wax and wick all consumed to maintain the light of the candle?"

Pru. "Because our whole Body and Soul should be at the service of and be spent for that Grace of God which is in us."

Matt. "I'm so very grateful for these wonderful and instructive answers which have given Light to my heart. Please, I would wish to ask but one more. What is it that we are to learn by the cock's crow?"

Pru. "To remember Peter's Sin, and his Repentance. It also shows us that the Day is coming soon. Let the crowing then bring to your mind that last and terrible Day of Judgment."

Having said these things, and knowing that the time of their departure from the Palace was soon approaching, the Family gathered *Christianna* and all together for some final words of encouragement. And such marvelous things they were shown.

First was shown that Apple, pleasant to the sight but poisonous to the taste, which Eve did eat and her husband. At the sight *Christianna* remarked, "How deadly a curse can such an innocent and desirable looking thing be when forbidden by God. It makes me tremble to even think of tasting what I must not" [Gen.3:6; Rom.7:24].

From there they were taken where they could gaze upon the Ladder of *Jacob* and beheld Angels ascending thereupon which made them marvel. It was *Joseph* who said, "This is a most pleasant prospect to rise with them into the Heavens above. It makes me long to be there myself" [Gen.28:12; Jn.1:51].

Next they came to where a Golden Anchor hung upon the wall and *Christianna* was bidden to take it down. "This," said they, "you shall have with you, for it is absolutely necessary for you to lay hold of that within the veil. By it you can stand steadfast against all manner of stormy weather encountered on your Way" [Heb.6:10].

They were then led to Mount Moriah where *Abraham* offered up *Isaac*, his son. There they gazed upon the Altar, Wood, the Fire and Knife, for they remain to be seen up to this very day. The sight of these deeply moved them within so that they raised their hands and blessed the name of the Lord, saying, "O! What a man for Love to his Master, and for denial of self was *Abraham*! May we do likewise and offer up to You

our dearest and best!" [Gen.22:9].

Finally, the Family had them to the dining room where *Prudence* played upon the harp and sang them this song:

Eve's Apple we have showed you;  
Of that you must beware:  
You have seen Jacob's Ladder too,  
Upon which Angels are.

An Anchor you received and have,  
But let not these suffice,  
Until with Abra'm you have gave  
Your Best, a Sacrifice.

# 14

## VALLEY OF THE SHADOW OF DEATH

We must now return to the progress of *Christian*, the Pilgrim, who, you will remember, had only just come off victorious against the Fiend, *Apollyon*. I saw in my dream that after his song of Thanks, a Hand came to him with some of the leaves of the Tree of Life. These *Christian* took and applied to the wounds that he received in the battle, and was healed immediately [Rev.22:2].

Being greatly encouraged by this merciful provision, he refreshed himself with a bit of bread and a drink of the bottle provided to him before. Thus strengthened and restored, he proceeded on, with Sword drawn in his hand. Yet he met with no other affront quite through to the end of this Valley.

Now at the end of this Valley was another, called, The Valley of the Shadow of Death. The Way to the Heavenly City lay straight through it and, as such, every Pilgrim must pass this way.

This Valley is a very solitary place. The prophet *Jeremiah* describes it as a wilderness, a land of deserts and pits; a land of drought, and of the shadow of death which no man (but a *Christian*) passes through, and where no man dwells [Jer.2:6]. Here, he was worse put to the test than his encounter with *Apollyon*.

When he had just gotten to the borders of this Valley, two men came racing towards him in panic and haste. Now they were children of

them that brought up an evil report about the good land [Num.13:31-33].

Then said he, "Where are you going?"

Men "Back! Back! And we would have you do so too, if either Life or Peace is prized by you!"

Chr. "Why! What is the matter? What have you met with and what have you seen?"

Men "Matter? What have we seen? Why we were nearly in the Valley itself when we saw it as black as tar, full of Spirits, Satyrs, and Dragons of the Pit [Ps.44:19]. We heard a continual howling as of people in anguish and misery. Over the Valley hang discouraging clouds of Confusion with Death spreading its wings over it and Chaos throughout its length" [Job 3:5; 10:22].

Chr. "I do not perceive as of yet by what you have said that this is the wrong road to the Heavenly City."

Men "See to that yourself. As for us, we will not choose this for our Way!" And, with that, they took to their heels again and *Christian* was left to face the Valley before him.

Now I saw that the Valley had a very deep Ditch on the right hand [Ps.69:14] into which the Blind of all ages have led the Blind to their mutual destruction [Mt.15:14]. Again, on the left, lay a very dangerous Quicksand, into which, if even a good man falls, he finds no bottom for his feet to stand upon. It was into this that King *David* once did fall and nearly was smothered therein had it not been for Him that is able who plucked him out.

The pathway here was exceedingly narrow and only with great caution did *Christian* avoid the Ditch and the Mire. The way, being so exceedingly dark, made him sigh and tread with trembling for he did not know where, or upon what, his foot may land.

*Poor man! Where are you now? Your Day is Night:*

*Good man, do not be cast down, you yet are right.*

*Your Way to Heaven lies by the Gates of Hell:*

*Cheer up, hold out, with you it shall go well.*

About the midst of this Valley, I perceived the mouth of Hell to

be very close alongside the Way. Here continually did flame and smoke billow out in such abundance, with sparks and hideous noises swirling about him. These things cared not about *Christian's* Sword as did *Apollyon* before, so he took up that other weapon, All Prayer [Eph.6:18]. Thus did he cry out, "O Lord, I beseech You, deliver my soul!" [Ps.116:4]. Thus with flames licking out at him, he proceeded on amidst woeful voices, and rushing to and fro, so that sometimes he thought he should be torn in pieces, or trodden down like mire in the streets. This frightful sight and dreadful noises were along his Path for quite nearly several miles.

He came then to a place where he thought he heard a whole Company of Fiends coming forward to meet him. Now here he stopped and began to think what he best ought to do. Sometimes he thought that perhaps he should surely go back. But then he would think that he might have already gotten halfway through the Valley. And then it came to mind that he had already vanquished many dangers, and that going back might be worse than continuing, and that he had no protection for his backside, neither could he face any opposition. So he resolved to press on.

The Fiends came yet closer and closer and when they were nearly upon him, he cried out, "I will walk in the Strength of the Lord God!" [Ps.71:16]. And they gave way and came no further.

Here in this Valley, I took notice that poor *Christian* was so confounded, that he did not recognize his own voice from that of another. And so it was when he had just come opposite the mouth of the burning Pit, that one of the Wicked Ones crept softly up behind him and whispered many grievous Blasphemies to him. Now, as I said, he was so confounded that he actually thought that these had come forth from his own mind.

This, above all else, did afflict him grievously to think that he would now Blaspheme Him who had loved him so well. Control it, he could not. Neither did he have the discretion to either stop up his ears nor to know from whence these thoughts proceeded.

After traveling in this miserable and degrading condition for some time, he thought he heard the voice of a man before him, saying, "Though I walk through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I will fear no

ill, for You are with me" [Ps.23:4]. Then was *Christian* glad; and that for three reasons.

First, because he perceived that some who feared God were in this Valley as well as himself.

Secondly, he understood that God was with them, though in that dark and dismal state. And, why not, thought he, with me as well, though I can hardly perceive it.

Thirdly, he had the hopes of overtaking them to have Company along the Way.

Thus greatly encouraged, he pressed on until, by and by, the Day broke. Then said the Pilgrim, "He has turned the Shadow of Death into Morning" [Amos 5:8].

Now, since Morning had come, he looked back, not out of a desire to return, but to see by the Light of Day, what Hazards he had come through in the Dark. Then he saw more perfectly the Ditch and the Mire as well as the Spirits, Satyrs, and Dragons of the Pit. Yet all of these he saw from afar off. For after break of Day, they did not come near, but they were shown to him according to that which is written, "He discovers deep things out of Darkness, and brings out to Light the Shadow of Death" [Job 12:22].

*Christian* was much affected with his deliverance from all the dangers of his solitary Way which he now saw more clearly in the Light of Day. And a Mercy it was too that the Sun would shine at this point, for the Way which lay ahead was, if possible, far more dangerous. From where he stood even to the end of the Valley, the Path was set full of snares, traps, and nets as well as pits and deep holes. Had he traveled this section in the Dark, had he a thousand souls, he surely would have lost them all.

But, as the Sun was now rising, he came quite safely to the end of this Valley where he exclaimed, "His Candle shines on my head, and by His Light I go through Darkness" [Job 29:3].

As he emerged, he stopped abruptly, for there ahead of him lie bones, blood, ashes, and mangled bodies of men who, though Pilgrims, had suffered a terrible fate. It then came into his mind what was written; "Our bones are scattered at the Grave's mouth, as when one cuts and

cleaves wood upon the earth” [Ps.141:7].

Now this did make him to call out to God, “My eyes are upon You, O God, the Lord, in You I take refuge; keep me from the snares which they have laid for me and the traps of the workers of iniquity” [Ps.141:8, 9]. No sooner had he finished praying than just before him, he spied three Giants lurking in their Caves. And fearful were they to behold.

By name they were *Pagan*, *Pope*, and *Psychos*, being born of the same father though by different mothers [Jn.8:44]. All were illegitimate children of harlotry, *Pagan* being the oldest of the three. His mother was one filthy wench of Babylon, *Samurais* by name, who was the consort of *Nimrod*. Now he was the one whose scattered Tower sent *Pagan* throughout the world [Gen.11:1-9].

His immediate junior brother was called *Pope*. This one was born by fornication with her whom he named *Mary* (not to be confused with the mother of our Lord). She held the haughty title of Queen of Heaven though she was nothing but a treacherous imposter.

The last born was a vigorous and attractive youth, quite strong for his age, named *Psychos*. His birth came from an unlawful union with the lustful mistress of one, *Sickman Fraud* (this is the true spelling of his name though others would have it, *Sigmund Freud*).

All three were violent haters of the Lord of the Way and desperate enemies of Pilgrims who crossed their path. They each have many in their service to do what harm they can to any traveling to the Heavenly City.

I saw then, as *Christian* stood somewhat amazed at the scene before him, that *Pagan* came forth and made his assault upon the Pilgrim. He first sent forth a black creature of the wing to swoop upon and grip *Christian* in its claws. But try as it might, never could it alight upon him [Prov.26:2].

This, of course, infuriated the Giant who now betook himself to his arsenal of charms, witchcraft, incantations, etc. by which he invoked all the powers of the Pit to effect. Now *Christian*, seeing that he was being attacked, drew his Sword and raised up his Shield by which he stoutly withstood the assault. The curses were turned to a blessing by the Lord of

the Shield [Deut.23:5] and the unclean spirits defeated by repeated thrusts of the Sword so that he was quite unhurt.

*Pagan* “I will have your blood, you miserable dog! I call upon the spirits of the Ancestors, all gods of the land, and the Demons from Infernal realms to devour, shred, and annihilate you!”

Then did *Christian* cry out boldly to the Throne of Grace, saying, “Let them curse, but do Thou bless; When they arise, they shall be ashamed, but Your servant shall be glad” [Ps.109:28]. At which cry *Pagan* did shriek horribly and fell back. Upon seeing this *Christian* followed quickly with another thrust of his Sword, declaring, “Counsel a counsel, and it shall come to nothing; Speak a word, but it will not stand, for God is with us!” [Isa.8:10].

Now at this Word, *Pagan* staggered, trembling upon one knee, furiously raging still. Pressing his advantage, the good Man landed his final devastating blows, “Stand now in your Spells and in your many Sorceries with which you have labored from your youth; perhaps you will be able to profit, perhaps you may cause trembling.

“You are wearied with your many Counsels; let now the Astrologers, those who Prophecy by the stars, those who predict by the new moons, stand up and save you from what will come upon you.

“Behold, they have become like stubble, fire burns them; they cannot deliver themselves from the power of the flame.

“So have those become to you with whom you have labored, who have trafficked with you from your youth; each has wandered in his own way; there is none to save you!” [Isa.47:12-15].

As the Pilgrim fell upon him with these Words, *Pagan* writhed in anguish, crying out as his wounds bled profusely. Summoning what little strength remained, he crawled, twisting and serpent like, back into his Cave where he moaned and did not come at *Christian* again.

*Pope*, who had witnessed this encounter, thought he would approach him with a different tactic. Now you must know that in former times, *Pope* always burnt Pilgrims at the stake or drowned them after subjecting them to all manner of unthinkable tortures. This he does up to today, only in certain parts of his domain where Civilization has little influence. Such barbarity is greatly frowned upon in those modern

environs where he attires himself in more comely garments. So he began thus.

*Pope* “How now, good Pilgrim, I can see that you are one of my estranged children. Welcome back to the fold, where I, the Papa of the Faithful, will comfort and assist you along your Way to the Heavenly City.”

*Chr.* “I have one Father, even God, and I serve one Lord, Jesus Christ, and none other [I Cor.8:6]. I will not come under your influence for I perceive that you are an Imposter since there is nothing written about you in the Word of my Prince.”

At this the Giant trembled with annoyance but quickly regained his composure, saying, “But it is your Prince Himself who has given me the Keys of the Kingdom, to bind and loose by my own authority.”

*Chr.* “Woe unto you, *Pope*, for you have taken away the Key of Knowledge; you yourself did not enter, and those who were entering you hindered, making them twice the Sons of Hell as yourself” [Lk.11:52; Mt.23:15].

Now the Giant nearly burst out in fury at this affront and just managed to control himself once again and replied, “I am willing to receive and forgive any who have strayed from the True Church. My bosom is large and accommodating to all, regardless of their differences of doctrine and practice. Come, and embrace me, my son.”

*Chr.* “Yours is the embrace that smothers. Your doctrines are devilish and your pretensions deceptive. You have exalted your goddess *Mary* as a co-mediator with the Prince of Peace. His Word condemns this, your idolatry. ‘For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus’ [I Tim.2:5]. You wickedly deceive men by saying that there is no salvation apart from your counterfeit church. Yet the Scriptures say that Jesus Himself is the Way, the Truth, and the Life, that no man comes to the Father except by Him [Jn.14:6].

“Moreover, you put men in bondage by your man-made device of confessing one’s sins to a priest who presumes to act in the place of God in pronouncing forgiveness. The Word of God condemns you, O *Pope*. *David* has taught us the True way, saying, ‘I acknowledged my sin unto You. I said, “I will confess my transgressions to the Lord”; and You

forgave the guilt of my sin. Therefore, let everyone who is godly pray to You’ [Ps.32:5, 6]. True Christians’ sins are forgiven because they pray to the God of Heaven who alone has authority to forgive sins and not to your imposter priests! Now, O Giant, stand back or suffer the thrusts of my Sword.”

At this, *Pope* made a desperate lunge at *Christian* in murderous rage. But before he could grab him, he became entangled in the Traditions wrapped around his feet and fell face down upon the ground which knocked him senseless for some time. And so, the Pilgrim escaped his hands and thankfully went on his way, saying, “He has delivered my soul in peace from the battle that was against me” [Ps.55:18].

Now I saw that as he passed on, he came near the entrance to the Cave of the third Giant, being that of *Psychos*. He contentedly smiled upon the Traveler with an inviting gesture to join him and numerous others who happily were gathered into his comfortable parlor.

There his eyes met the strangest sight. Within were a great host of Patrons of the Giant, each with subdued and pleasant smiles. They all sat with their own mirror before them while continuously arranging themselves in its reflection. They seemed to derive great satisfaction in contentedly gazing at themselves with great delight.

All the while this was going on, the most soothing and entrancing music softly played in the background sedating their souls into a stress-free stupor. What was most alarming though, were the Bible verses each were quoting while their eyes were steadfastly fixed on their own images in the glass.

“I have peace with God,” one would say. Another declared, “I am fearfully and wonderfully made.” Others repeated, “I am blessed,” or “In Christ, I am complete,” and “He loved me and gave Himself for me,” etc.

*Psychos* “Come and join this well-adjusted congregation. They are at peace with themselves. They have discovered their sense of Worth with a strong Self-Image. They can now love, for they have learned to love themselves.”

*Chr.* “Occupation with Self is the very thing that the Gospel of our Lord Jesus came to save us from. ‘He died for all that those who live

would no longer live for themselves, but for Him who died and rose again on their behalf [2 Cor.5:15]. No, *Psychos*, I will not venture in lest I too fall under your spell.”

*Psychos* “But, my dear Man, does not the Word of God instruct us to gaze in the Mirror? Why it says so in the Epistle of James chapter one.”

*Chr.* “The purpose of gazing in the Mirror of God’s Word is not to appreciate oneself, but to discover the blemishes and uncleanness which are upon us that they might be remedied [Jas.1:23-25]. Our looking in the Word is for a twofold purpose: One, to recognize and be cleansed from our sins that we might become doers of His Word, and, Two, to see the Glory of the Lord Jesus therein that we might be transformed into His Image, not to improve our own” [2 Cor.3:18].

*Psychos* “That may all be well and good, but there is a great need for everyone to receive Healing of their Emotions by learning to accept themselves just as they are.”

*Chr.* “You are a deceiving Tyrant of the worst sort! It is by His Stripes that we are Healed, not of emotions, but of the deadly sin within the breast of all self-occupied sinners [I Pet.2:24; Ps.41:4]. And as for accepting yourself, this is an outright contradiction of the very Words of Christ Himself. He says that unless a man Denies himself, he cannot be a disciple at all [Mt.16:24]. A man must flee Self and Repent or he will surely perish [Lk.13:5]. The command of my Lord is clear for any who have eyes to see, saying, unless you Hate your own Soul, you cannot be My disciple” [Lk.14:26].

*Psychos* “But behold the peace of these within and how Loving Self has freed them from all manner of distresses.”

*Chr.* “This is no testimony of Freedom, but only of their Bondage while under your spell. Their own peace is simply that as the World gives and comes not from Christ Himself [Jn.14:27; 16:33]. He it is who has Overcome the World and bestows His Peace even in the midst of Trial and Tribulation. He Himself is our Peace [Eph.2:14], not this dazed stupor dependent upon your hateful techniques. And as for Loving Self, it is you who have perverted the Scriptures to your own destruction while likewise beguiling these. The Commandment of my Lord is twofold: to

Love Him with all my heart and soul and mind and strength and likewise, to Love my neighbor as myself [Mt.22:37-39]. The Commands are but Two, and not three, as if loving Self is to be added to them. We are simply to do unto others as we would have them do unto us [Mt.7:12] and esteem them more important than Self [Phil.2:3].

“In fact, your wicked ways are directly contrary to the Truth of the Word of God throughout. Christ demands death to Self by taking up one’s own Cross in order to follow Him [Mt.10:38]. We are forbidden to Look upon our own things, but rather to consider those of others [Phil.2:4]. And as for the true Servants of God, they have Overcome your father the Devil which these have not, and that in a threefold way [Rev.12:11]: One, they have been set free from his Dominion by being washed of their sins in the blood of the Lamb [Col.1:13, 14]. Secondly, they resist you and your father by the True Word of God which is not wrested to their own destruction as do these, your Slaves. And thirdly, they do not Love Themselves, even if it means dying for their Faithfulness to Him who died for them.

“No, I will not heed you for an instant, you son of the Serpent. He is more crafty than any beast of the field and you are his offspring indeed. Your tongue devises mischief and deceitfully loves Lying in all your devouring words. God shall destroy you forever, pluck you out of your dwelling place, and root you out of the land of the living” [Ps.52:2-5].

*Psychos* “Have it your own way, then. Go pleasantly; you may yet see the error of your ways and return to me. As for me, I am comfortably satisfied for the time being with this multitude of devotees. I am full (for he was of that clan of Cannibals who feed upon the Flesh of men) and need you not at the present. Others will come to replace those who have gone.”

And so *Christian* passed by him in amazement at the Smooth and Flattering words of this enemy of the Way of Righteousness. In fact, I did think that this one may prove to be the most deadly of the Three as, though he was yet a youth, he had already grown to be a Giant.

And so did *Christian* exit this Valley with little hurt to himself, but with a depth of experience which comes only by passing through this place.

# 15

## GREAT-HEART RETURNS

No sooner had *Prudence* sounded the last note of her song, that there was a knock at the door to which the *Porter* responded. Each expectantly awaited the introduction of the guest, hoping that it might be their faithful Guide. When he strode into the waiting company, you can imagine what Joy there was!

Then said *Great-Heart* to *Christianna* and to *Mercy*, “My Lord has sent each of you a bottle of Tonic [S.of S. 5:1], and also some Parched Corn [Josh.5:11, 12], together with a couple of Pomegranates [S.of S. 4:11-13] as tokens of His love. And to you my boys, He has also sent some Figs and Raisins to refresh you along the Way” [Mic.4:4].

These they received with deep gratitude and humility that their Lord should think upon them thus. And so, they prepared themselves for their Journey and *Prudence* and *Piety* desired to escort them upon their Way.

As they came to the Gate, *Christianna* did heartily thank the good *Porter* for all his numerous kindnesses to her and her family and placed in his hand a golden coin showing *Michael* the Archangel slaying the Dragon.

He made a low bow and said, “Let your Garments always be white [Rev.3:4, 5], and let your head lack no ointment [Ps.23:5]. Let *Mercy* live and not die, and let her Works not be few” [Acts 9:36]. And to the boys he charged them, saying, “Flee youthful lusts and follow after Godliness

with those that are serious and wise [2 Tim.2:22]. Let no man despise your youth, but in everything prove yourselves to be an example to those who believe [I Tim.4:12]. So shall you put gladness in your parents’ hearts.”

They then thanked the good *Porter* once again and set out upon their Journey. As they came to the brow of the hill which descends to the Valley of Humiliation, *Piety* cried out, “O! I have forgotten what I intended to bring for all of you upon your leaving us. I will run back and fetch it.”

After she hurried back to the Palace, *Christianna* thought she heard in a little grove of trees, a most curious and melodious note with words like these:

*Through all my Life Your Favor is  
So frankly showed to me,  
That in Your House for evermore  
My dwelling place shall be.*

And as she listened still, she thought she heard another answer it, saying,

*For why? The Lord our God is good;  
His Mercy is forever sure:  
His Truth at all times firmly stood,  
And shall from Age to Age endure.*

*Prudence*, noticing her listening with wonder, said, “These are our Country birds; they sing these notes only seldom, except during the Spring when the flowers appear, then you may hear them all day long [S.of S. 2:11, 12]. We often times keep them tame in our House and they prove to be very fine company for us when we are melancholy.”

By this time *Piety* returned with an Outline of all those things that they had seen at their House. “This you may look upon when you find yourselves forgetful. The remembrance of them will be for your edification and comfort.”

Having bid them farewell, the company of Pilgrims made their way cautiously down the Hill into the Valley of Humiliation. Now the Way was slippery and steep, but they were very careful and made it down pretty well.

*Great* “It was reported in our Lord’s Place that here your husband met with the Fiend, *Apollyon* and did battle in this Valley.”

*Channa*. “Is it so? O, my dear husband! Please, is he well? How did he fare in the conflict?”

*Great* “He did valiantly and did make the Monster take to his wings and fly, having received many a wound from *Christian*’s faithful Sword. I am happy to relate that he is fine though he nearly was crushed by the Beast.”

*Channa*. “Our Lord is to be praised who delivers us from him who is too strong for us [Ps.18:17]. I fear this happened to my dear husband for my negligence in prayer in his behalf.”

*Great* “There are some things that may be caused by that, but it was not so in his case. Had he not slipped on his descent into this Valley, he would not have met with *Apollyon* in the plain. For they who get Slips there, must look for Combats here” [Eph.4:27].

*James* “Look, mother, over there stands a Pillar with an inscription.”

They drew up to it and read this, “*Let Christian’s Slips, before he came here, and the Battles that he met with in this place, be a warning to those that come after.*”

Then their Guide did turn to *Christianna* and say, “No offense to *Christian* more than to many others who have encountered the same thing in this place. This Hill is unlike others in the world, for it is easier to go Up this one, than to go Down.

“The Valley of Humiliation is well suited to expose that subtle turn from Trust in the Lord to that Vain-Confidence in oneself and his religious achievements. Even the Apostle *Peter* wrestled with *Apollyon* in this very place. You recall how insistent he was that he would never deny his Lord though both the Word of God and the Word of Jesus told him otherwise [Mt.26:31-35]. It was because of this Slip that he was sifted like wheat by Satan himself [Lk.22:31].

“Humiliation cures us of thinking more highly of ourselves than we ought to think [Rom.12:3] and of that vain boasting which imagines that we are something when we are nothing [Gal.6:3]. This is why we must look carefully to our Steps, lest we too miss our footing on this Slippery path.

“*Peter* discovered that it was the Word of the Lord which proved to be true, and not his own self-assessment. It was this Word along with our Lord’s own Intercession which brought about his Restoration [Lk.22:32, 61].

“These experiences make us weep bitterly when this subtle reliance upon Self is revealed to our hearts [Lk.22:62]. Of course, those who abide in Humility need not meet with such as did *Christian* and *Peter*, for the humble have learned the folly of Self-Confidence. Indeed, the Proud are always resisted by God while the Humble receive Grace upon Grace as they walk in lowliness of mind [Jas.4:6; I Pet.5:5].

“Yet truly, this is the most Fertile of Valleys and sustains bountiful Fruit by the handfuls, well-pleasing to the Lord of the Valley. Yea, Peace and Contentment reside here with nothing to molest or disturb.”

Now as they were going along, they saw in the meadow, a boy feeding his Father’s sheep. His clothing was of a poor and lowly kind yet his countenance was pleasingly fresh. And as he sat, he sang the words of this song:

*He that is down, needs fear no Fall;  
He that is low, no Pride:  
He that is Humble, ever shall  
Have God to be his Guide.*

*I am content with what I have,  
Little it be or much:  
And, Lord, Contentment still I crave,  
Because You will save such.*

*Fullness to such, a Burden is,*

*That go on pilgrimage:  
Here little, and hereafter Bliss,  
Is best from Age to Age.*

Then said their Guide, "Do you hear him? I will dare say, that this boy lives a more satisfied life, and wears more of that herb called Heart's Ease in his soul, than tens of thousands of those prospering in the things Below.

"Our Lord Himself loved much to be here; to walk in its pleasant Pastures and breathe its sweet Air. Besides, here a man shall be free from the Noise and hurrying of this life and all manner of noise and confusion so that he may Meditate on those things Above without hindrance.

"This is a Valley that no one walks in unless he loves a Pilgrim's life. And, I tell you, that in former times men have even met Angels here [Gen.18:1, 2; Heb.13:2] and have found Pearls and the Words of Life."

Mercy "I think that I am as well in this Valley as I have been anywhere else in all our Journey. This Place is most suited to my spirit. I love to be in such places where there are no roaring of engines and rumbling of wheels, where one can Meditate upon our King, and the heart be melted in contrition. They that go rightly through this Valley of Bacha (which is the King's language for Weeping), shall make it into a Spring [Ps.84:5, 6]. Indeed, here it is that a Door of Hope is opened amidst all our Trouble where we may sing for joy in the Vineyard of the Lord" [Hos.2:15].

Great "'Tis true, I have gone through this Valley many a time, and never was better than when here. I have been Conductor to several Pilgrims who have confessed the truth of these words according to the True saying: 'To this man will I look (says the King), even to him that is Poor, and of a Contrite spirit, and that trembles at My Word'" [Isa.66:2].

By this time they drew near to the entrance to the Valley of the Shadow of Death from whence emitted mournful groans and hideous tormented Lamentation. Then it was that the very ground began to shake under them and a hissing as of a Serpent reached their ears though nothing appeared to their sight.

Their Guide did admonish them all to look well to their feet lest

any might become ensnared along the Way. Now James began to be sick, likely due to fright. So his mother brought out a drink from her bottle of Tonic and gave him three of the Pills prepared by Mr. Skill, and the boy did revive.

About the middle of the Valley, those that most feared kept close to their Guide as an ugly Fiend rushed towards them in all its terror. But when it was just come up to them, it vanished to all their sight. They then remembered what had been said some time ago; "Resist the devil, and he will fly from you" [Jas.4:6].

They had not gone far when Mercy, looking behind her, saw a great Lion stalking after them whose hollow voice of roaring filled the whole Valley to echo fearfully so that their hearts did quake. Great-Heart swiftly put the Pilgrims before him while he moved to the rear and faced the Beast with Sword drawn in his hand. The Lion, seeing he was firmly to be Resisted, withdrew and came no further [I Pet.5:8, 9].

On they went, then, and came upon a great Pit that spread its mouth quite all across their Path. Before they could proceed, though, a thick mist and a Darkness fell upon them, so that they could not see their Way. And then they were tumbled about in their minds as to what they should now do.

Great "Fear not, stand still and see what end our Lord shall make of this as well [Ex.14:13, 14]. Be encouraged! Has not the Almighty said, 'Let them that walk in darkness, and have no light, trust in the name of the Lord, and rely upon their God?'" [Isa.50:10]. And so, they all cried out to God in prayer, "O send out Your Light and your Truth, let them lead me; Let them bring me to Your holy hill and to Your dwelling places" [Ps.43:3]. And you can well imagine, that their prayer was heard on High and the mists and Darkness disappeared.

They safely passed through the Pit unharmed only to be met with stinking and loathsome smells which made Mercy to exclaim, "This is not so pleasant a place as that of the Gate, or Interpreter's House, and the beautiful Palace we so shortly have left."

Samuel "It is not so bad to go through here as it is to abide here always. Why, if I ever get out of here again, I think I shall prize Light and the good Way better than I ever did in all my life and that our Home

above will become all the more sweeter to me.”

*Great* “Well said, *Samuel*, you have spoken truly like a man.”

*Joseph* “Cannot we see the end of this Valley as of yet?”

*Great* “The end cannot be reached without taking the next step. Look well to your feet, for we very soon shall be among snares” [Prov.4:25-27].

So they took heed to their Steps and managed to avoid the Snares strewn along the Way, though not without difficulty. They also spied a man cast into the Ditch on the left side with his flesh all mangled and torn.

“This,” said their Guide, “is one called *Heedless*, who has lain in this condition for long. You cannot imagine how many are killed hereabouts, and yet men are so foolishly bold to set out ill-prepared and lightly on Pilgrimage without Fear or a Guide.”

By this time they were nearly out of that Valley and approached unto those Caves which *Christian* encountered at the first. With Watchfulness and Prayer they passed before that of *Pagan*, for they had been warned of his devices against all who pass that way.

He, however, did not come forth against them though they were prepared to meet him with Resistance if he had. Then they noticed a trail of blood leading into his Cave which had been spilt by *Christian*’s assault upon him. And as they listened, they thought that they heard groaning of one in Misery from within and concluded that the Giant had suffered the worse at the point of the Pilgrim’s Sword.

But at the next Cave, *Pope* sat at the entrance in full view, glaring at them in hate and disdain. He made motions at the Company as if he would have grabbed whomever he could reach and make an end of them. But the enormous lump on his brow received when he pursued *Christian* had swollen his eyes shut so that he could not see. And thus, all he could do was shout insults and threats at them as they passed.

When the Den of *Psychos* was before them, they saw no one present in his parlor, neither the Giant himself. All that met their gaze was a multitude of scattered mirrors upon the ground, but no signs of life within. It was then that the sickening sound of cracking and crunching of bones was heard from deep within his Lair followed by an evil echoing

laugh of satisfaction.

With shuddering, they passed safely out of that Valley into the light of Day with good cause to rejoice at the Lord’s Deliverance all along the Way. It was *Matthew* who spoke what was in the hearts of all, saying, “I think that God has been wonderfully Good unto us, both in bringing us out of this Shadow of Death and in saving us from all of those Enemies and Evils within. As for me, I see no reason why we should distrust our God anymore, since He has given us such a testimony of His Love and Care as He has done in this place.” To this, they said their grateful “Amen,” and paused there to Thank the Lord of the Way.

# 16

## FAITHFUL & FAMILY

Now as *Christian* went on his Way, he came to a little hill placed there purposefully by the King so that Pilgrims might see before them. He therefore ascended thereon and saw *Faithful* ahead of him upon his Journey. At this sight, *Christian's* heart leaped within him and he shouted, "Hello! Good Pilgrim, wait for a moment and I will be your Companion!"

*Faithful* looked over his shoulder without slackening his pace and replied, "No, I am fleeing for my Life, and the Avenger of Blood is behind me" [Deut.19:6]. At this, *Christian* hurried to overtake him and did, in fact, outrun him. Then he smiled in self-satisfaction because he was now ahead of his brother. But not taking good heed to his feet, he suddenly stumbled and fell and could not rise again until *Faithful* came up to help him [I Cor.10:12].

Then I saw in my dream that they rested and refreshed themselves a bit with each other's Company, for you must know that they both were exceedingly glad to now walk together in this Pilgrim Way. As they talked of those things they had met on Pilgrimage, *Christian* inquired about their neighbor, *Pliable*, saying, "Was there any talk in the Town when he returned after setting out with me?"

*Faith.* "Ah! He has been the subject of all men's mocking and is

now seven times worse off than if he had never gone forth at all" [Mt.12:44, 45].

*Chr.* "Well, at my first setting out, I had hopes of that man; but now I fear he will perish in the overthrow of the City. For it has happened to him according to the true proverb, 'The dog returns to its own vomit again, and the sow, after washing, to her wallowing in the mire' [2 Pet.2:22]. May the Lord have Mercy upon his soul. But let us relate of the Lord's dealings with ourselves which we have met along the Way. Tell me, Friend, what did you encounter upon your Journey?"

*Faith.* "I met with no mishap at the Slough of Despond and got up to the Gate without danger except that one enticing woman named *Wanton* approached me and nearly ensnared me."

*Chr.* "It was well that you escaped her Net: *Joseph* was sorely tempted by her as you have been, but it nearly caused him his Life [Gen.39:11-13]. But what did she do to you?"

*Faith.* "You cannot imagine what a Flattering tongue she had; she pressed me hard with her words to turn aside with her, promising me all manner of Satisfaction" [Prov.7:21].

*Chr.* "Not at all! She never promised you the Satisfaction of a Good Conscience! Thank God you have escaped her for it is the abhorred of the Lord who shall fall into her pit" [Prov.22:14].

*Faith.* "Well, I do not know whether I wholly escaped her or not."

*Chr.* "Why, I trust you did not consent to her desires, did you?"

*Faith.* "No, not to defile myself; for I remembered an old Writing that I had seen, which said, 'Her steps take hold of Hell.' So I shut my eyes, because I would not be bewitched with her looks [Prov.5:5, 6:25, Job 31:1]. It was then that she railed against me and went her way."

*Chr.* "For this we truly bless the name of the Lord, my Brother. Was there anything else to relate?"

*Faith.* "Oh, yes, indeed. I met a very aged Man who asked who I was and where I was going. So I told him and he said, "You look like an honest fellow; why not dwell with me and I will give you your Wages." He then introduced himself as *Adam the First* and then our conversation went on like this:

Faith. "May I know where you dwell?"

Adam "I dwell in the town of Deceit with my three lovely Daughters."

Faith. "And what is the nature of your Work and the Wages you pay?"

Adam "My Work is many Delights and my Wages are that you shall be my Heir at last."

Faith. "And what type of House do you maintain and how long am I to live with you?"

Adam "My House is full of all the Dainties and Delights of this World. I will also give you all three of my Daughters in marriage whose names are *Lust of the Flesh*, *Lust of the Eyes*, and *Pride of Life* [I Jn.2:16]. And there you can live with me as long as I live myself."

Chr. "Well, what did you and he finally conclude?"

Faith. "At first, I was somewhat inclined to go with him, for I thought he spoke very well. But as I looked at his forehead as we talked, I saw there written, 'Put off the Old Man with his Deeds' [Eph.4:22]."

Chr. "And what then?"

Faith. "Then it came burning hot into my mind that, whatever he might say, when he got me to his House, he would sell me for a Slave. So I told him to leave me, for I would never come near the door of his House. At that he reviled me, and told me that he would send such a one after me, that it would make my Way bitter to my Soul."

"So I turned to go away from him; but just as soon as I did, I felt him take hold of my Flesh and give me such a deadly jerk back that I thought he had pulled part of me after himself. This made me cry, 'O wretched Man!' So I went on my way up the Hill."

"Now when I had gotten about halfway up, I looked behind me and saw one coming after me, as swift as the wind. He overtook me at just about the place where the Arbor stands."

Chr. "That is the very place where I sat down to rest and lost my Testament when I was overcome with Sleep."

Faith. "Sorry, my brother. But let me conclude. Well, as soon as the man reached me, he spoke but one word and promptly struck me so hard that I was knocked to the ground, I thought, half-dead. When I

was aroused but a little, I asked him why he had done so. He replied, 'Because of your secret desire to go with *Adam the First*': And, with that, he landed another deadly blow on my chest and beat me down backwards so that I lay at his feet as before."

When I came to myself again, I cried out to him for Mercy but he said he didn't know how to show Mercy to any; and, then he knocked me down again [Gal.3:10]. He undoubtedly would have made an end of me had not One come by and told him to leave me."

Chr. "And who was it that sent him away?"

Faith. "I did not know Him at the first; but as He passed by, I perceived the Marks in His hands and side and concluded that it was our Lord [Lk.24:39, 40]."

Chr. "That Man who overtook you was Moses. He spares no one, neither does he know how to show Mercy to those who transgress his Laws."

Faith. "You have rightly said so. For it was he who came to me when I dwelt securely at home and told me that he would burn my house down over my head if I stayed there."

Chr. "The Lord be praised who Delivers us from the terrors of the Law and the craftiness of the Old Man. But what of your Journey through the Valley of Humiliation. Did you not meet anyone there?"

Faith. "Yes, indeed. I met with a man named *Discontent* who willingly would have me go back with him. He told me that the Valley was altogether without Honor and that to proceed would be to disobey all my Friends, such as *Pride*, *Arrogance*, *Self-Conceit*, *Worldly-Glory*, and others, whom would be very much offended if I made such a Fool of myself to continue through this Valley."

Chr. "And so how did you answer him?"

Faith. "I told him that all of these, it was true, were my relations according to the Flesh. But now that I have become a Pilgrim, they have all disowned me, as I have also rejected them. Furthermore, I said, you have misrepresented this Valley, for it is Written, 'Before Honor is Humility and a Haughty spirit goes before a Fall' [Prov.18:12]. Therefore, I had rather go through this Valley to the Honor of Him that is the Wisest than listen to any Natural Fleshly Reasoning or your own

Discontent.”

*Chr.* “You answered his wicked counsel well, my Brother. We have cause to thank our God for His ever present Grace in time of need to meet with such Tests of Faith” [Heb.4:16].

*Faith.* “It is truly a great blessing, especially when I next met *Shame*. He was the most forward opponent I’ve come across all along the Way.”

*Chr.* “Why, what did he say to you?”

*Faith.* “What! He spoke against Religion itself, saying that Lowliness of Mind was an unmanly thing; that always watching carefully over one’s Words and Actions would make him the ridicule of any Sensible man of the World. He told me that it was Shameful that there were but few of the Noble, Mighty, Rich and Wise of this World among Pilgrims” [I Cor.1:26, 3:18].

*Chr.* “Ha! A bold Rogue he is indeed.”

*Faith.* “But that is not all. Listen further. He said it was only Fools who would risk the Loss of all for something as despised and uncertain as going on Pilgrimage [Phil.3:7, 8; Jn.7:48]. And which of you, said he, understands the Learning of Science or the Philosophy of the Age? Your Ignorance is your Shame. And furthermore, it is a Shame to sit and moan under the words of a Sermon, to ask one’s Neighbor for Forgiveness for petty faults, and many other such things which he cast up in my mind like refuse and mud” [Isa.57:20].

*Chr.* “But what did you answer to all his Shameful accusations?”

*Faith.* “Truly, at first, I could not tell what to say for he so caused Shame to rise up within me. But at last I began to think that what is highly esteemed among men, is an abomination in the sight of God [Lk.16:15]. And I thought further, that this *Shame* has told me only what Men think and nothing of what God says. This led me to consider the Final Day of Doom. We will not be Judged there by the Opinions of Men but by the Unchanging Wisdom and Law of the Most High.

“I thought, then, that what God says is Best and True, though all the World is against it. That it is the most Noble attainment to become a Fool for Christ’s sake, to be Weak and without Honor, than perish in the Folly of Human Judgment” [I Cor.4:10].

*Chr.* “Your reflections are sound and well grounded in the Word of Him who cannot lie. But did you not say anything to this *Shame* himself?”

*Faith.* “Indeed, I did. I spoke to him thus, ‘*Shame*, depart, for you are an Enemy to my Soul’s Salvation. Shall I entertain your Wicked Words against those of my Sovereign Lord? Never! For I am determined to never be Ashamed of His Ways and His Servants lest He be Ashamed of me at His Coming’ [Mk.8:38]. But, I’m telling you, he was a bold Villain; one which I could scarcely shake off and leave his company. He continued to sneak and whisper in my ear Shameful things about the Pilgrim’s Way. I at last rebuked him by saying that the things which he did most despise are those things which are my greatest Glory [2 Cor.12:9, 10]. Finally, however, I was free of him and went on my Way, singing,

*The Trials that those men do meet in all,  
That are obedient to the Heavenly Call,  
Are manifold and suited to the Flesh,  
And come, and come, and come again afresh;  
That now, or some time else, we by them may  
Be taken, overcome, and cast away.  
O let the Pilgrims, let the Pilgrims then  
Be vigilant, and behave themselves like Men.*

*Chr.* “I am glad, my Brother, that you did withstand this Villain so bravely. He is, as you said, a most Troublesome sort, for he boldly follows us in the streets and tries to put us to *Shame* before all men so that we might deny the Good. But let us steadfastly resist him, for he is nothing more than the worst of Fools according to the true Word, ‘The Wise shall inherit Glory: but *Shame* shall be the promotion of Fools” [Prov.3:35].

*Faith.* “It is true, my good Friend, we must cry to the Lord for help against this *Shame*, that we might be Valiant for the Truth upon the earth.”

*Chr.* “It is well to do as you have said according to what has been Written, ‘If any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be Ashamed. But

let him Glorify God on this behalf“ [I Pet.4:16].

*Faith.* “But what of yourself, have you not met with anything along the Way?”

*Chr.* “Met with! Ah, my Brother, it was the fiercest Contest a man could ever endure. Not long after I entered the Valley of Humiliation, I was assaulted by one of the most Hideous Fiends imaginable. In fact, he...”

Now, I saw in my Dream, that just at this juncture, *Christian’s* narration was interrupted by approaching Melodious notes coming from that end of the Valley they had so lately left. The two Pilgrims rose from the Shade of their tree and beheld a small Company of Travelers approaching under a Banner of Love [S.of S. 2:4], with the High Praises of God in their mouth, and a Two-edged Sword in their hand [Ps.149:6]. Leading the Way was a seasoned Soldier of the Prince of Peace whom neither had before met, though they could easily see that they were Pilgrims indeed.

At this sight, the two Men rejoiced at the prospect of others joining in their Fellowship along the Way. As they drew nearer, Shouts of Joy arose from, first the approaching Company, and then from *Christian* himself as they recognized each other’s faces.

The Good Man fairly leaped like a Hart in his haste to Greet his Beloved Wife and Family with a Kiss of Love [S.of S. 2:17].

*Channa.* “O, my dear Husband, is it well with you? Has the Lord rescued you from all Evil?”

*Chr.* “With many Thanks to Him who Reigns above, it is Well with my Soul as I trust it is with you, our Children, and our Sister, *Mercy.*”

*Channa.* “We Bless the Lord, my Husband, it is so with us as well. The Lord has delivered us from many Dangers by His Grace and through the help of our trustworthy Guide.”

*Chr.* “Dear Sir, it is with a Thousand Thanks I greet you for all of your kindness shown toward these, my Family and Friend.”

*Great.* “All Praise and Glory belongs to the Most High. I am merely an unworthy Servant who has done only what I ought to have done [Lk.17:10]. Your Testimony has spread far and wide [I Thess.1:8], Good *Christian*, and I am Grateful to God for meeting you thus.”

At this, *Christian* bowed a low bow, saying, “Whatever I am, I am by the Grace of Christ [I Cor.15:10], though I would not attribute to Him my many Faults, but only Praise Him yet more and more that His blood cleanses from all Sin” [I Jn.1:7].

*Great.* “I can see that this Valley of Humiliation has been a blessing to your Soul as that Fruit of all Fruits, Humility, is springing up in your Heart.” The Pilgrims’ Guide then turned and warmly greeted *Christian’s* Friend. “It is with Joy that we meet you here upon the Way to the Heavenly City, my Brother. My name is *Great Heart.*”

*Faith.* “With Pleasure I join your Band in this Way of Life. It is one of Life’s greatest Comforts for Brethren to dwell together in Unity along the Upward Way [Ps.133]. And I am, by name, *Faithful.*”

They all then Greeted one another in Brotherly Love [Heb.13:1] and discoursed upon those things which they encountered upon the Way. *Christian* did Bless each of his Children and ask after their Welfare and Progress as Pilgrims to the Satisfaction of his heart. *Mercy* attended to Deeds of Kindness to make each as Comfortable as possible while *Faithful* and *Great Heart* rehearsed the Goodness of the Lord in leading them thus far.

After refreshing themselves with a bit of Bread [Jn.6:51], *Christian* took up his story about his Battle with *Apollyon* to the fearful amazement of the Brethren who listened intently. When they had heard, they committed themselves to the Lord in Prayer with Thanksgiving, rejoicing in their Mighty Deliverer, and arose to continue upon their Way.

# 17

## HONESTY, FEARING, SELF-WILL & TALKATIVE

They had not gone far when they spied an Old Pilgrim fast asleep under the shade of an oak tree. They could tell that he was a Pilgrim because of his Clothes, Staff, and how he was Girded for the Journey [Ex.12:11]. So they approached and awakened him, at which he cried out and jumped to his feet, saying, “Who are you? And what is your business with me?”

*Great* “Come now, do not be so hot. We are Friends who, like you, trek this Path to the Heavenly City. Greetings, in the name of our Lord Jesus.”

When Mr. *Honest* (for that was his name) heard this, he relaxed somewhat and said, “Please, I beg your pardon for my approach upon you at first. I thought that you were of that band of Robbers who lately have been in these parts. But I can see truly that you are none of those.”

*Great* “Why, what had you thought to do if we were Robbers?”

*Hon.* “Do? Why I would have fought as long as there was breath in me; and I am certain that I would not have been overcome, for that can by no means be unless the man himself yields to the assault” [I Cor.10:13].

Upon hearing this, the Company smiled amongst themselves at finding so Bold a Companion as this, and welcomed him to join with them along the Path, saying, “We perceive that you are an Honest man, for you have spoken the Truth plainly.”

*Hon.* “And I, as well, by your so saying, am certain that you know what true Pilgrimage is, for others believe that We are the easiest to overcome among all men.”

*Chr.* “Well, now that we have so happily met, please, let us know your name and from whence you have come?”

*Hon.* “By name I am called *Honest*, though I could wish that it was more of my Nature than merely my name. I dwelt in that town known as Stupidity, not far from the City of Destruction, but further removed from the Light of the Sun than they. It is a colder and more senseless place than that of their neighbors, but I am persuaded that though a man was in a mountain of Ice, if the Sun of Righteousness would but shine upon him, his frozen heart would melt in that Light; and so it has been with me [Mal.4:2]. And now, good Companions, please let me know your names.”

*Chr.* “Gladly. I am by name, *Christian*, and this is my Beloved *Christianna*, and these...”

Now before he could proceed further, Old Mr. *Honest* leaped and skipped around like a lamb while blessing them with a thousand good wishes, saying, “I have heard the Good Report of your Faith, Courage, Endurance, and Sincerity from many who hold you in high Esteem. May your End be blessed as was your going out so that your entrance into that Inheritance Above be abundantly supplied to you [2 Pet.1:11].

“And you, Dear Sister *Christianna*, truly you have arisen a Mother in Israel, may your Children and Husband ever rise up and call you Blessed, having as your Garland, that Beauty which arises from the Fear of the Lord” [Prov.31:28-30]. Then he turned to the Boys and asked of their names, and proceeded thus:

“*Matthew*, may you be like that Tax Collector turned Apostle, not in his Vice but in his Virtue. And you, *Samuel*, may you resemble that Prophet who so excelled in Faith and Prayer above many.

“*Joseph*, follow the example of your namesake in Purity of heart, fleeing Temptation and Forgiving your Brethren [Gen.39:9-13; 50:17-21]. And *James*, follow after him who was the brother of our Lord, not in his Unbelief, but in Revelation of the Risen Christ to his soul [Jn.7:5; I Cor.15:7].

“And who is this Daughter of Jerusalem,” he inquired as he turned towards *Mercy*. Having learned her name, he looked kindly upon her, saying, “*Mercy* is your name; and by *Mercy* you shall be sustained and

carried through all Difficulties encountered along the Way until you look full in the Face of that Fountain of all Mercy, opened up at the Cross which flows freely now from the Throne of Grace.

“And you, my dear Brother *Faithful*, that is your name, and Faithful shall you remain, though the Gates of Hell descend upon you. Be Faithful unto Death, and you shall receive the Crown of Life [Rev.2:10].

“Lastly, I salute you, a *Great Heart* indeed; a true *Barnabas*, a Son of Encouragement. May you continue a Good Man, full of the Spirit and of Faith unto the Blessing of many” [Acts 11:22-24].

Having said so, the whole Company was very much pleased and smiled lovingly upon their new Companion as they joined in step once again upon the Way. And, as they walked, they conversed together as Pilgrims do.

*Great* “Do you happen to know a Mr. *Fearing* who came forth on Pilgrimage from your town?”

*Hon.* “Yes, very well indeed. He was a man who had the Root of the matter within him, but one of the most troublesome Pilgrims one could ever meet with.”

*Great* “I perceive by this answer that you know him well. It was my charge from our Lord to conduct him along his way to the Heavenly City.”

*Hon.* “Then, please, let us hear of how he fared along the Journey.”

*Great* “Gladly. He was of the sort that always Feared that he would come short at last of that Place to which he desired to go. Everything frightened him, even the talk of others, not to mention any actual opposition. I was told that he lay for nearly one month at the Slough of Despond roaring and crying out fearfully that he should never be able to cross. Even so, he would not go back to what he had forsaken.

“This one was cast down in his spirit at every difficulty, and stumbled at every straw cast upon his Way. Well, one Sunshine morning, he somehow managed to get across, and even then would hardly believe it of himself. I think that he had a kind of Slough of Despond in his mind which he carried with him everywhere he went.

“When he drew near to the Gate at the head of the Way, he feared to knock lest he be rejected and gave place to others before himself saying that he was unworthy to enter. And there the poor man would stand there shaking and shrinking back, but he would never turn and go back.

“At last he summoned up what little courage he had and rapped lightly once or twice at the Gate. When asked, ‘You that Tremble, what do you seek?’, he fainted quite on the spot. So he was assisted up and bid enter with the words, ‘Peace be to you. Up, for I have set before you an Open Door. Come in, you Blessed of the Lord.’ Even then, he was ashamed to show his face.

“When he was encouraged along his Way, he proceeded to the House of the *Interpreter* where he lay outside in the cold for many a day, not having the courage to even knock for admission. But in all this, he never went back. In fact, he had a note of Necessity given to him to present to my Master that he might receive and comfort him and provide him with a valiant Guide for his safe conduct. Even still, he lay outside the House until he was almost starved.

“It was I who noticed him outside and went forth to ask him what he wished. Ah, poor man, the tears came into his eyes and he could scarcely speak. Knowing what he wanted, I told it within the House where, when the Lord heard of it, He bid him come within and unto Himself. And I must say that our Lord was exceedingly loving towards him as He is with all those who are fearing.

“Never was he more Cheerful than when he gazed upon the Cross and the Tomb where he stood in admiration for some time before leaving that Place. The Hill of Difficulty and the Lions did not cause him the least concern, for his fears were not of those things, but of whether he would be accepted at last.

“Reluctantly, I was able to manage him into the Palace Beautiful, not that he did not greatly desire the blessings of that House, but that he felt himself too unworthy to share in such Company. I saw him more than once, listening around the corner to the profitable Discussions within the next room, but he rarely would come and sit together with us. Afterwards, he told me that he loved to be in those two Houses, but he

lacked the Boldness to say so.

“As we reached the Valley of Humiliation, I never saw him brighter than when there. Why, he would fairly embrace the ground and kiss the very flowers that grew in that place. He cared nothing at all about how lowly or despised he might be so long as he would, at last, be received Above.

“Ah, but when approach was made at the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I thought I had nearly lost my man, not that he had any inclination to go back, for that he always abhorred, but that he seemed that he would die of Fear. Yet, I confess, that I never before or since saw that Valley as quiet as when we passed. I suppose that those Enemies had a restraint placed upon them by our Lord until he had gotten quite through [Job 1:12].

“Well, it would be too tedious to tell you all else that he passed through other than, when we approached the River and he saw no bridge, he was cast into a very heavy and mournful state of mind, bemoaning that he should never see that Face who had brought him thus far. But when I was able to encourage him somewhat to enter the Waters, it was remarkable at what a low ebb they flowed. I think they have never been so still as when he went over to the Other Side when I saw him no more. But he, at last, got himself safe Over and up to the Gate of the City where he was received with Joy.”

*Hon.* “So, it seems that all was well at last.”

*Great* “Yes, yes. I never had a doubt of him. He was a man of choice spirit, only kept himself so low that he made his life burdensome to himself and troublesome to others” [Ps.88].

*Hon.* “But why is it that a good man such as this should be all his days so much in the dark?”

*Great* “In the Wisdom of God, it is discovered that some must play the Pipe and others must Weep [Mt.11:16-18]. Now Mr. *Fearing* was one who played upon the Bass notes and not a bright Trumpeter. This, however, is much to be preferred to that shallow false profession which is always Positive and Bubbling, never having known that Heaviness of mind which leads to true Repentance [2 Cor.7:9]. Indeed, the first string that is touched by the musician when he would put all into tune, is the

Bass. God plays upon this string first, when He sets the soul in tune for Himself. Only here was the imperfection of Mr. *Fearing*, he could play upon no other music but this one until he crossed over into that Better Land.”

*Channa.* “This recounting of Mr. *Fearing* has done me good. I had thought before that no one had been like me. But now I see that there is some similarity between this good man and myself. For, while his troubles were open and evident, mine were kept hidden within. He would scarcely venture to knock for entrance, while my own discomfort made me to knock all the more.”

*Mercy* “If I might be permitted to speak my mind, I must say that some of his nature has dwelt in me as well. Fear of the Lake and the loss of Paradise [Rev.20:13-15] has ever terrified me more than the loss of anything in this World.”

*Matt.* “Fear was one thing that made me think that I was far from having Salvation. But if it was so with this good man, why not also with me?”

*James* “No fears, no Grace. Though there is not always Grace where there is the fear of Hell, yet to be sure, there is no Grace where there is no Fear of God.”

*Chr.* “Fear is that healthy Dread and Hatred of Evil [Prov.8:13], apart from which, no one can properly claim to be on Pilgrimage.”

*Great* “Well said, you have all hit upon the mark; for the Fear of God is the beginning of Wisdom. And if a man lacks the Beginning, you can be sure that he will have neither the Middle nor the End. And so, we shall leave him for now with this parting word:

*Well, Master Fearing, you did Fear  
Your God, and were afraid  
Of doing anything while here  
By which He is betrayed.  
And did you Fear the Lake and Pit?  
Would that others did so too!  
For, as for those who lack your wit,  
They do themselves undo.*

Now I saw that they went on in their discussion as they walked on together. And it was Mr. *Honest* who inquired if any had met with one, Mr. *Self-Will*, along their Journey. None had, so he related his encounter like this:

*Hon.* “Ha! I doubt that I’ve ever met with a more Stubborn man. He cared nothing for Others, for sound Reason, or for godly Example. He was rightly named, for whatever his own mind prompted him to do is what he did. I am persuaded that he never came in at the Gate.”

*Faith.* “Tell us, then, what Principles did he hold to?”

*Hon.* “Principles? He had but one, *Self-Will*. He insisted that a man might equally follow the Vices of Pilgrims as well as their Virtues and still enter in the City Above. Why, he said that the Scriptures themselves supported his *Self-Willed* notions.”

*Great.* “This is amazing! How could anyone imagine that God approves of doing the Evils as well as the Good of Pilgrims and make no distinction between them? I can see that this one is a dangerous sort.”

*Hon.* “Indeed he was. He claimed that since *David* committed adultery and yet was the Beloved of God, that he could as well. He said that *Solomon* had many wives, so he could also. Furthermore, he pretended that because *Rahab* and the Midwives of Egypt spoke lies and yet were saved, so he could do the same. And that’s not all! He asserted that if the Disciples went at the request of their Master and took away the owner’s donkey, that he could equally do likewise. Finally, he wickedly claimed that since *Jacob* used Deceit and Hypocrisy to gain the Inheritance of his father, that his own Heavenly portion could be obtained thusly.”

*Great.* “What! Have any of you heard of a more Wicked wresting of the Scriptures to one’s own Destruction than this?” [2 Pet.3:16].

*Hon.* “Now he did not claim that just anyone might behave so, only those who also possessed the Virtues of Pilgrims.”

*Chr.* “But what could possibly be more false than this? This is the same as saying that, because a good man sinned due to of a weakness of the Flesh, that he might do it willfully by predetermined choice. Or, if a child stumbles on a stone and is dirtied by the fall, that he might

willfully wallow in the mire like a hog.

“Who could imagine that a man might be so Blinded by his own Lust to think like this? It has happened unto him according to what is Written, ‘They stumble at the Word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed’ [I Pet.2:8].

“And to imagine that if someone has a godly man’s Virtues, he can equally addict himself to their Sins is Abominable to Him whose eyes are too pure to look upon such [Hab.1:13]. It is the same as saying that a Dog can have the qualities of the Child by simply licking up his excrement. To eat up the Sin of God’s People is no sign that one is possessed with their Virtues at all [Hos.4:8]. He is among those who make the Way of our King to Stink in the nostrils of men and give them reasonable cause to Blaspheme the Name of our Lord” [Rom.2:23, 24].

*Faith.* “There are many strange Opinions in the world. Some say that it is soon enough to repent when they are about to die.”

*Great.* “These only show their Folly. Which man who had one week to run twenty miles, would postpone that Journey to the last hour of that week?”

*Hon.* “You have spoken the Truth. Many claiming to go on Pilgrimage are of these misguided notions. Some set out as if they would drive all the world before them, and yet, in a few days, have died in the Wilderness. I have seen others who have spoken well of a Pilgrim’s life at the first who, after a while, have spoken as much against it. There are those who Boast of what they would do should they meet with Opposition that even at a false alarm, have fled the Faith, and given up all. And, then again, there are those who have shown little promise at the first who, one would have thought, could not have lasted but a day, that have proved to be very good Pilgrims.”

And then did the Brethren sing:

*He who would go as a Pilgrim down here,  
Needs Tremble with caution and godly Fear;  
For He who judges and casts into hell,  
Watches if Evil’s despised very well.*

Now I saw in my dream that they happened to come upon one walking along the Path just ahead of them. *Faithful* then, being greatly encouraged by the Brethren who had joined with him lately, eagerly sought to bring this man into their same Fellowship. Now the man (whose name was *Talkative*) was tall and handsome to appearance, more at a distance than at close observation, and *Faithful* addressed him:

*Faith.* "Friend, how now? Are you on your way to the Heavenly Country?"

*Talk.* "I am going to that very Place."

*Faith.* "That is wonderful! I hope then that we might have your good company along our Way?"

*Talk.* "With a very good will, I would like nothing better."

*Faith.* "Come then, let us spend our time in discussing things that are profitable."

*Talk.* "To me, to Talk of things that are good is very acceptable and it is a pity so many choose to speak of things to no profit. What better use of the Tongue than to Talk of the things of God: Things such as the History, Miracles, and Mysteries of the Holy Scriptures.

"By doing so, a man may gain Knowledge of many things, like the vanity of Earthly things, the necessity of the New Birth, the insufficiency of our Works; and the need of Christ's Righteousness as well as learning what it is to Repent, to Believe, and to Pray.

"Talking is the sure way to learn what are the great Promises and Comforts of the Gospel, the need of Faith, and the necessity of a work of Grace in the soul unto Eternal Life. Yes, Talk will deliver us from ignorantly living in the works of the Law by which no man can enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

*Faith.* "These are true things you say. But, excuse me please, no man can attain to these by human wisdom or by merely talking of them."

*Talk.* "All this I know very well. A man can receive nothing unless it be given to him from Heaven. All is of Grace, not of Works. Why, I could quote a hundred Scriptures to prove it so."

*Faith.* "Well, what then should we Talk of?"

*Talk.* "Why, anything you wish: I will Talk of things Heavenly, or things earthly; things Moral or things Evangelical; things Sacred or

things Profane; things Past or things Present; any and all are alike to me provided that it be to our profit."

Now *Faithful* began to wonder somewhat about the man, what the others thought about him, so he excused himself momentarily in order to seek the Counsel of those Wiser than he [Prov.11:14]. So as he joined the Group, he exclaimed (though softly so as to not to be heard by *Talkative*), "I think we have found ourselves a very excellent Pilgrim."

To this there was no immediate reply and *Faithful* began to sense that the others did not share his enthusiasm. It was *Christian* who gently commented first.

*Chr.* "This man with whom you are so impressed will deceive with his Tongue twenty men who do not know him."

*Faith.* "Do you know him then?"

*Chr.* "I am surprised that you do not, for he dwells in our City of Destruction. His name is *Talkative*, son of *Say-Well*, who lives along Babbling Blvd."

*Hon.* "What *Christian* has said is quite true. This man is for any Company, provided he can Talk. He is equally at home in the Church as he is in the Beer Parlor. Godliness has no place in his heart, house, or manner of life. All the Religion he has is in his Tongue to make a noise thereby."

*Faith.* "Then I have been greatly deceived in my estimation of him!"

*Great* "You may be sure of that, good Brother. Remember the Proverb, 'They say and do not' [Mt.23:3], and 'the Kingdom of God is not in Words, but in Power' [I Cor.4:20]. He Talks of Pearls yet remains a Swine. The common saying where he lives is, 'Saint abroad, and a Devil at home.'

"He is so abusive and unreasonable at home that his own family hardly knows how to speak to him. And should any of his sons begin to be moved in their Conscience about their sins, he will rail on them as Fools and blockheads.

"In his dealings in the Market place, he is despised by all for his unfaithfulness and greed at other's expense. He has been the cause of many Stumbling and falling, and, if God does not prevent it, will be the

ruin of many more. In short, he is a Blot and Stain on all true Pilgrims by his wicked burning life notwithstanding his Tongue of Silver.”

*Hon.* “I know for a fact that good men are ashamed of him and none of them dare call him Brother or Friend. The very mention of his name makes them blush because of his evil Reputation.”

*Faith.* “Well, I see clearly that Saying and Doing are two different things altogether.”

*Chr.* “As different as night and day. One may Speak while yet in the dark, but only in the Light can one Walk without peril to his own soul. As the Body without the Soul is dead, so is Talk if it be not joined with Deed. This is plainly the Scripture’s meaning when it says, ‘What use is it, my Brethren, if someone Says he has Faith, but he has no Works? Can that Faith save him?’ [Jas.2:14]. Certainly not, for it is Written again, ‘Prove yourselves Doers of the Word, and not merely Hearers who delude themselves’ [Jas.1:22]. And I assure you, this *Talkative* is no more than a puff of a Cloud with no Water” [Jude 1:12].

*Hon.* “*Christian* has rightly spoken. For, what is to be the Fate of a tree who constantly drinks of the rain and puts forth leaves, but bears no Fruit? Surely the Sentence is, ‘Cut it down!’ [Lk.13:7]. And thus it shall be with all such empty Talkers who have nothing Good to show for all that they profess.”

*Faith.* “This reminds me of what God has spoken through *Moses* when describing the Clean and Unclean animals. To be Clean, one must both chew the Cud and divide the Hoof [Lev.11:3, 4]. The Camel, though it chews the Cud, it does not divide its Hoof, and thus is Unclean. It is thus with this *Talkative*. He so loves to have the Word in his mouth but his walk is no different than that of a dog or other Unclean beasts. He Speaks great things, but his feet do not part ways with Sin. This, I see clearly, is the great error of all Talkatives.”

*Great* “You have spoken the true Gospel sense of those texts, my Brother. And let me add one further thing: *Paul* calls some who, though they Talk like Angels, are nothing more than noisy Gongs and clanging Cymbals [I Cor.13:1]. He says this for two reasons. The first being, that they have not that Life of Love which makes their speech sweet and good, which gives Grace to the hearers [Eph.4:29]. They are therefore Lifeless

things though they make a great Noise.

“Secondly, having not that Life of Love, all that comes forth from their Mouths is made offensive and hateful in the ears of the hearers as there is no harmony between what is said and done, but only a grinding and disgusting Noise. And thus the true saying has its fulfillment in *Talkative*, ‘Like the legs which are useless to the Lame, so is a proverb in the mouth of fools’” [Prov.26:7].

*Faith.* “Brethren, your Counsel is a Balm to my soul. But what should I now do, seeing I’ve already welcomed him as I did?”

So they consulted together briefly and concluded with one mind [I Cor.1:10] that he should go to him and engage in some serious conversation about the Power of the Gospel. “Ask him,” they said, “whether it has been established in his Heart, House, and Manner of Life.”

*Faithful* then stepped up again to him, greeted him, and asked after his Health and general well-being.

*Talk.* “Thank you, well. I thought that by now we should have had a great amount of Talk.”

*Faith.* “Well, let us begin now with this question: How does the Saving Grace of God show itself when it is in the Heart of a man?”

*Talk.* “I see then that our Talk must be about the Power of Things: Well, it is a very good question and here is my reply. First, where the Grace of God is in the heart, there will occur a great Outcry and protest against Sin.”

*Faith.* “Excuse me, please. I think you should rather say that it shows itself by causing the soul to hate its own Sin.”

*Talk.* “Why what is the difference between Speaking against Sin and the Hating of it? Its all the same to my mind.”

*Faith.* “Oh! But they are altogether different, for a man may raise his Voice against Evil in general while never raising a Hand against it in his own soul. Many cry out against sin in the Pulpit while holding it close to the bosom in House and Community.

“*Joseph’s* Mistress cried out with a loud voice as if she were very holy; though she desired lustfully to commit uncleanness with him” [Gen.39:15].

*Talk.* “I perceive that you are trying to catch me in my words.”

*Faith.* “No, I am only for setting things correctly. But please, go on.”

*Talk.* “Secondly, is that one will have great Knowledge of Gospel-Mysteries.”

*Faith.* “This sign should have been First; but either way, it also is false. For even great Knowledge of Gospel-Mysteries may be obtained without any Work of Grace in the soul at all. The Apostle confirms that a man may Know all Mysteries, and yet be Nothing [I Cor.13:2].

“When Christ said, ‘Do you Know all these things?’, He proceeded to add, ‘You are Blessed if you Do them’ [Jn.13:17]. The Blessing is in the Doing, not in the Knowing alone.

“For if a man Know His Master’s Will, and not Do it, he shall be judged with the greatest of Judgment; for he Knew but did not Do [Lk.12:47]. The only Knowledge which is pleasing unto God is that which sets a man upon Doing His will. All else is that Knowledge which will serve to the stricter Condemnation of Talkers and Boasters.”

*Talk.* “You are trying to find me out again! This is not for edification.”

*Faith.* “Well, propose another sign of the true Grace of God in a soul.”

*Talk.* “Not I, for I see we will not agree.”

*Faith.* “If you then will not, may I continue?”

*Talk.* “You are free to do so if that is what you wish.”

*Faith.* “A Work of Grace in the Soul is evident both to him that has it and to those who observe him. He himself knows it because he is Convicted of his own Sin, inner Corruption, and Unbelief [Jn.16:8, 9, Rom.7:24; Ps.38:18; Jer.31:19]. Then He is convinced of his need for a Savior, and will not rest until he has repented of Sin and Received the Provision of Christ Himself [Acts 2:37-39; 4:12; Jn.1:12]. This is followed by that Righteousness, Peace, and Joy flooding his soul which only comes through Holy Spirit of the Most High [Rom.14:17].

“The Testimony of this Gracious Work to fellow men is evidenced by his confession of Christ as Lord [Rom.10:10] in accord with a life of Holiness: Heart-holiness, Home-holiness, and Community-holiness [Jn.14:15; Ezek.20:43; I Pet.1:14-16]. This causes him to hate it in

himself, not tolerate it in his home, and turn away from Evil in all his dealings with men. And this is done, not by Talk, like a Hypocrite or a Talkative person may do, but by a practical subjection in Faith and Love to the Power and Cleansing of the Word of God [Jn.17:17; 2 Thess.2:13].

“And now, Sir, I wish to ask you if you have experienced the First part of this Work and if your Life bears witness to the Second? Do not answer, ‘Yes,’ unless both the Lord of Heaven and those who know you best would agree with your Talk.”

Now *Talkative* seemed to chafe most uncomfortably under this Discourse and particularly at those pointed Questions to his own Soul. He managed to recover himself somewhat though and rather stiffly replied, “This kind of Discussion I did not expect, nor do I need to give you an answer in this. You are not my Judge and so I will not reply. But why do you ask me such things?”

*Faith.* “Because I saw you very ready to Talk, though all Reports of you by Good and Honorable Men declare that your life proves your Words to be Lies. While your Mouth opens to Talk of Heaven, it equally opens to swallow Beer. Though you Speak against the Crimes of the Times, your Family cries against your Ungodly Crimes at Home. You are just as comfortable in the company of Saints as you are with the Sons of Belial. A Chameleon of the worst sort are you; here one way and there another.

“Some have already Stumbled at your wicked ways and many more are in danger of being destroyed thereby. The proverb of the Harlot is true of you, which says, ‘She is a Shame to all Women.’ So you are also a Shame to all Pilgrims.”

*Talk.* “Since you are quick to believe any manner of Report blowing about and to judge so maliciously as you do, I can see that you are a Dismal man filled with only your own misguided opinions, and are therefore unfit to Talk to.”

And having said so, he turned to his own way and kept his distance from the Brethren whom *Faithful* now joined once again.

*Chr.* “It is how we knew it would happen. Your Words and his Lusts could never agree. He had rather leave our Company than Reform

his life.”

*Hon.* “Yes, Brother, let him go. The Loss is no one’s but his own. For his going with us would have only been a Stain in our midst. Besides, the Apostle says, ‘From such turn away’“ [2 Thess.3:14].

*Great* “You did well to speak plainly to him as you did. There is but little of this Faithful dealing with men in our days which makes Religion to Stink in the sight of many. Should such Corrupt and empty Talkers be admitted into the Fellowship of the Godly, it causes the world to puzzle, it blemishes Christianity, while grieving the Sincere. It is a true saying; Our Teaching ought either to drive men to Christ, or drive them away altogether.”

Then did *Faithful* say:

*How Talkative at first lifts up his plumes!  
How bravely does he Speak! How he presumes  
To drive down all before him! But so soon  
As Faithful talks of Heart-Work, like the Moon  
That’s past the Full, into the Wane he goes;  
And so will all, that no Heart-Work knows.  
Alas! O Talkative, where shall you then be?  
Will Talk bring you a Blessed eternity?  
Nay! Though Truth, in your Mouth, ring like a bell,  
Your Feet will yet plunge you to Hell.*

Now the day was soon to draw to a close and the Pilgrims, being wearied from their Journey (especially the Women and Children), longed for a place of Rest along the Way. After a moment’s reflection, *Great-Heart* spoke up with an encouraging Word. “There lies just before us an Inn, hosted by a very honorable Disciple who loves to entertain Travelers upon this Way. Be of good Cheer, we shall presently be at his door.”

# 18

## GAIUS

Because of this good Report given by their Guide, they were all content to turn in at his Lodging. And above the door hung this sign, “Host to all the Church” [Rom.16:23]. When they read this, they were pleased and gave Thanks to the Lord of the Way who had provided such a Shelter for His own. When the Master of the House greeted them, they inquired if they might pass the night there. Then said *Gaius*, for that was his name, “If you be Sincere and True Pilgrims, you are heartily welcome to Partake of all that is within.”

At this they were all Glad, for it was evident that he was a lover of the King’s Travelers, and were accordingly warmly received in the bonds of Love. Now when they were ushered inside, *Gaius* quickly called for his Daughter, *Phoebe*, and sent her to fetch their good Companion, Mr. *Mnason*, a Disciple of long standing [Acts 21:16], along with his two daughters. That being done, he sent word to the Cook, by name, *Taste-that-which-is-Good* [Ps.119:103], to prepare for their Guests while they conversed until Supper was ready.

Introductions were made all around. When it was *Christian*’s turn, their Host sat forward in his chair with great interest as he presented his family. He then sat back in amazement.

*Gaius* “So, this is the famous *Christian* whose Testimony has spread even to the regions beyond. Welcome! Welcome, good *Christian*,

and Welcome, you, his dear family. I knew your father and your father's Father.

"Your ancestors first dwelt at Antioch and were very worthy men, the best of the age [Acts 11:26]. They have, more than any I know of, showed themselves to be men of great Virtue and of strong Courage. Ah! And what Trials they have endured for the sake of the Truth, for Love to His name, and unto the Blessing of their Brethren.

"Stephen was one of the first of your Family's clan who stood Immovable for the Testimony [Acts 7:59, 60]. James, another of this generation, lost his head by the sword [Acts 12:8]. Not to mention the names of those Worthies, Paul and Peter, who perished for the Faith at the hand of the wicked Nero by his sword and cross.

"These were the Patriarchs of this good Christian family. Their descendants, in the next generation, endured all things even as your forefathers did. There was Ignatius who was eaten alive by the lions. Romanus had his flesh cut by pieces from his bones and Polycarp who sang as the flames surrounded him and burnt him to ashes.

"Others, whose names are lost to our records (but Recorded permanently on High), were hung in baskets in the sun for the wasps and ants to eat. Some were placed in sacks and thrown into the waters to drown.

"It would be impossible to relate all that this Christian family has suffered by way of injury, insult, and death for the Love that they have had for a Pilgrim's life. But glad I am to entertain you here today. May the Lord grant you and this, your faithful Wife, and these, your sturdy Boys, to Walk in this Way fearlessly, without turning to the right or to the left, and to receive the Crown of Life at last."

Now Christianna blushed at being included among such a catalog of notable Martyrs and the Boys would hardly raise their eyes, thinking that their own faith, so recently begun, should not be mentioned in the same breath with those of their Ancestors.

Chr. "Dear Sir, we do humbly receive your Hospitality shown to us, the lowliest among His Brethren and the smallest in our Clan. We are not worthy of even the least of His Mercies, but by the Grace of God we have come this far. And, as for your kindness shown to us, we

gratefully give thanks to God and to your Household. May He who righteously Rewards, not forget your labor of Love."

Gaius "By this answer I am even more certain that you are of this Ancestry and are a Christian indeed. Humility is the Garment worn by this Family by which they are recognized by all" [I Pet.5:5]. And then gesturing to all his Guests warmly, he welcomed each one again, saying, "It gives me and my house no greater Joy than to entertain Strangers and Pilgrims along the Way of Life."

Just then there entered into the Company that Disciple, Mnason, along with his two Daughters, Grace and Martha, accompanied by their escort, Phoebe. The girls bowed as they were introduced to the Guests and the Disciples embraced them all with great affection.

Their Host looked pleasantly upon the assembled Company and remarked, "The Lord has blessed our gathering with many dear Sisters, all Fair as the Moon [S.of S. 6:10]. Let us hold them in high esteem for the Honor granted them by our Lord as fellow heirs of the Grace of Life" [I Pet.3:7].

Now at these statements, they all cast their eyes down, embarrassed to be spoken of in such a manner. But the good Host was not finished with his praise of them yet and proceeded as follows:

Gaius "Let me now speak on the behalf of Women, to take away their reproach among men. Our first Mother, Eve, was called the Mother of all Living, for through a woman God would send His Son into this world [Gen.3:15, 20; Gal.4:4]. I will say again, that when the Savior was about to be born, women rejoiced in Him before either man or angel [Lk.1:42-55].

"Never have I read that any man gave to Christ even so much as one cent, but the women that followed Him gave of their substance [Lk.8:2, 3]. It was a woman that washed His feet with her tears and a woman that anointed His body for burial [Lk.7:37, 50; Jn.11:2]. They were women that wept when he was going to the Cross and who also followed Him from the Cross [Lk.23:27; Mt.27:55, 56].

"Women they were who sat by His tomb when buried and that were first with Him on that Resurrection morning [Mt.27:61; 28:1]. The first to bring the Glad Tidings that He was risen from the dead were

women [Lk.24:9, 10]. Women are therefore highly favored, and show by these things, that they are sharers with us in the Grace of Life.”

Now the Cook sent to signify that Supper was nearly ready, so the three Girls excused themselves to prepare the Table; to spread the Linen, arrange the plates, and set the Salt and Bread in order.

Matt. “The sight of this Cloth and the Preparations make me hunger all the more to partake.”

Gaius “Let all the Doctrines from the Word in this life, create that appetite in you to sit at the Supper of the great King in His Kingdom. For all the preaching and books here are only like setting Salt and Bread upon the table compared to the Feast prepared Above.”

So they all came and sat at the Table and, after Prayer, were presented with their food. *Grace* provided abundant portions so that there was not a needy person among them [Acts 4:33] while *Phoebe* and *Martha* served the Guests, for they were of the serving type [Rom.16:1; Jn.12:2]. And thus it was that by Grace, all the Brethren were served [2 Cor.9:8].

First were lifted up the Thigh and Breast with Thanksgiving and set before them [Lev.7:32-34] to show them that they must always begin their meal by lifting up Prayer and praise unto God [Ps.25:1; Heb.13:15]. These two dishes were very fresh and good and they all partook of them heartily.

Next was brought a Bottle of Wine, red as blood. “This,” said their Host, “is the juice of the True Vine that makes glad the heart of God and man” [Jud.9:13; Jn.15:1]. “Drink of this to your Joy and Refreshment.”

The Girls then came forth with Pitchers of Milk which they were directed to set before the Boys that they may grow thereby [I Pet.2:1, 2].

That being done, a large dish of Butter and Honey was set before them. “Eat freely of this,” encouraged good *Gaius*, “for this will cheer up and strengthen your Judgment and Understanding. This was our Lord’s portion when he was a Child as it is written, ‘Butter and Honey shall he eat, that He may know to refuse the Evil and choose the Good’” [Isa.7:15].

Apples, fragrant and red, were next presented and were found to

be very tasty indeed. Then said *Matthew*, “May we eat Apples, since by the Apple the Serpent deceived our first Mother?” To which *Gaius* replied:

*Apples were they with which we were beguiled,  
Yet Sin, not Apples, has our Souls defiled;  
Forbidden Apples, if eaten, corrupt the blood:  
To eat such when commanded, does us much good;  
Drink from His Vessel then, you Church, His Dove,  
And eat of His Apples, who are longing for Love.  
[S.of S.2:5]*

Matt. “I hesitated, because I once became sick from eating fruit.”

*Gaius* “Forbidden fruit will make you sick, but not what our Lord has provided.”

Now I saw that while they talked, the Girls set before them a bowl of Nuts. Then did *Christianna* say, “Nuts spoil tender teeth, especially those of the Children.” To which their Host replied,

*Hard Texts are Nuts, (I will not call them Cheaters)  
Whose Shells do keep their Kernels from the Eaters.  
Open then the shells, and you shall have the Meat,  
They are brought here for you to crack and eat.*

Hon. “Well, then, my good Landlord, let me propose a Riddle for you to crack for us. It goes like this,

*A man there was, though some did count him mad,  
The more he cast away, the more he had.*

They all paid close attention to what *Gaius* would say; so he sat for a moment and then replied,

*He that bestows his Goods upon the Poor,  
Shall have as much again, and ten times more.  
[Prov.28:27]*

*Joseph* “I dare say, Sir, I couldn’t imagine how you could have found out the meaning.”

*Gaius* “O! I have been trained up in this Way for a great while now. I have learned both from His Word and by Experience that the Lord repays Kindness shown to the needy.”

Then *Samuel* whispered to his father, saying, “Father, this is a very good House. Let us stay here for some time to come that we might all get profit to our Souls.” Now their Host overheard the Boy and smiled upon him and said, “Nothing would please us better, my Boy.” And he blushed that his words had been overheard, but his heart was glad at the invitation.

*Great* “Well done, good *Gaius*, but let me now put forth my own to Mr. *Honest*.” So his companion nodded his consent and listened carefully as *Great Heart* said:

*He that will kill, must first be overcome:  
If to live outside, he first must die at home.*

*Hon.* “Ha! It is a hard one; hard to expound and harder yet to practice. But I think the sense is this;

*He first by Grace must conquered be,  
If sin he would mortify:  
And he, that lives, must convince me,  
That unto himself he has died.*

*Gaius* “It is right. Good Doctrine and Experience both teach us this. For unless Grace first displays itself, and overcomes the soul with its Glory, a man is altogether without heart to oppose Sin. Besides, if Sin are the cords whereby Satan binds the Soul, how can a man make resistance before Grace has loosed him from that condition?

“Secondly, no reasonable man could ever be convinced that another is a monument to Grace who is a slave to his own corruption. The greater the Corruption, the greater the Grace that overcomes it and

the greater the realization to the Soul of the power of Grace to deliver” [Rom.5:20].

*Chr.* “Let me now direct my own riddle to our brother *Mnason*. I will state it like this:

*Indwelling a man, and he, dwelling therein,  
Must be slain by him to rise alive again.*

*Mnason* “This one requires more than a quick mind to resolve. If a man would live and yet be slain, it will take something more than his own resources, even the very power of God. Let me explain its meaning in this way;

*A man both dwells in his Flesh and it in him,  
But its not the Body, but its Evil within,  
That must by the Sword be slain,  
If he, the man, would Live again.*

*Chr.* “You have told the truth of the matter, my Brother. Though we dwell in the body, it is the evil desires and corruptible deeds that each, by his own hand, must put to death [Col.3:5]. And it is this crucifixion of our own Flesh which is the sure evidence that we are Christ’s, and that we are possessed of His Life” [Gal.5:16-24].

*Faith.* “I like your riddle very well and, better yet, its explanation. Let me now be permitted to ask our Host one which, I trust, will also be for our profit. It goes thus:

*This one, both loved by God and judged by Him,  
Is ruled unlawful by Devil and Sin;  
A snare to Saints, though living therein.*

*Gaius* “Good *Faithful*, you have opened up a deep one for us to unravel. The answer may be stated at once, though its outworking lasts a lifetime. Here is how I see it:

*God so loved the World, He sent His Son to die  
For those of the World, to raise them on High.  
Yet be warned! The World, its Pride, its Lust,  
Is ruled by its Prince, though we tread on its dust.*

*Faith.* “Well said, Brother. It is this present evil World that our Lord has come to save us from [Gal.1:4]. We cannot escape living in it, but we can escape it living in us [I Cor.5:10; Jn.17:14-16]. To love its ways makes us Enemies of our King [Jas.4:4], and proves that we do not have the Love of the Father in us [I Jn.2:15-17]. In fact, the whole World lies in the power of the Evil one [I Jn.5:19] and this is why we must be on our guard against it at all times.”

*Matt.* “Father, and Esteemed Sirs, I am greatly profited by this Discourse which has cheered my heart more than one who has found great spoil [Ps.119:162]. I would not presume to be able to propound any such Riddles to this Company, but, if I may, I would wish to ask a question.”

Now when his father and the rest heard this, they were pleased and indicated that he should proceed, and he did so, saying, “How is it that a true Believer can both Hunger and Thirst and yet be Satisfied. For if he is Hungering, is he not unsatisfied? And if Satisfied, will he not cease to Hunger? Please, I would be happy if you could expound this unto me.”

*Chr.* “It is a fine inquiry, and one which raises an issue of deep interest to all who walk this Pilgrim Way. Only Christ Himself can Satisfy the soul’s Hunger. While yet in the Far Country, the Prodigal hungered after the Husks of the Swine, and no one was giving him anything [Lk.15:16].

“But when he came to his senses, he proceeded directly to his Father’s house where he feasted upon the fatted calf and the Abundance of that Table [Lk.15:17, 23]. There he was Satisfied with more than enough with much remaining.”

*Mnason* “Your father has spoken truly. In Partaking of Christ, Hunger after Righteousness finds its Satisfaction. He is the Satisfying end of the Soul’s search so that one never Hungers for or is Satisfied with

anything but Him.

“Yet once eaten and received, He both Satisfies every Moment and, at the same time, causes Growth in the soul of the Believer. This very Growth necessarily develops the inner man and enlarges the Appetite which only continually coming to Christ can Satisfy” [Ps.119:32].

*Great* “God’s ancient people fed upon the Passover Lamb which strengthened them to move out of Egyptian Bondage [Ex.12:11]. But that one meal did not carry them throughout their Journey’s end. They yet Hungered for that true Bread from Heaven which they found to be their only Satisfying supply throughout the barren Wilderness of this World. But Satisfaction will only be gained in the gathering and partaking of the Bread of God, day by day [Ex.16:18, 21, 35; Deut.8:3]. May the Lord Jesus be your continual Satisfying Portion who fills your every Hungering after godliness.”

*Matt.* “I am very Grateful, Father, and Sirs, for this explanation. May I find Him to be so as you have said.”

To this, the Company smiled and said, “Amen.” So with many similar words of Encouragement and Edification to each other’s souls, they passed that first night even until dawn in this blessed fellowship.

Now when the Sun had risen upon them, *Christianna* asked *Joseph* to read a chapter from the Book for all to profit thereby. So he read from the 53rd of Isaiah.

*Hon.* “Why was it said that the Savior came out of dry ground, and also that he had no Appearance that we should be attracted to Him?”

*Mnason* “To the first I answer: Because among the Jews in the time of our Lord, nearly all the Sap and Spirit of true Religion had been lost. Such Dryness existed among them that, not only did they not receive Him, but outright hastened Him to the Cross.

“To the second I say, that the eye of the Unbeliever looks on the outward and carnal, and has no apprehension of the true Nature of Christ within [I Sam.16:7]. They are like those who cast aside as worthless the precious stone because it is covered with a common crust, or the pearl due to the despised form of its shell.”

And thus were passed their days for a good long time while they abode with *Gaius*, Host to the whole Church. It was evident to all men

that they were Disciples indeed, for their Love abounded yet more and more in true knowledge and all discernment [Jn.13:35; Phil.1:9], being expressed in manifold deeds of Charity and kindness [I Thess.1:3; Gal.6:10]. This did much to commend True Religion to those dwelling in those parts [Jas.1:27].

On one occasion, *Gaius* approached his Guests in this manner. “My Beloved Brethren, let us address ourselves to rid this place of one notorious Enemy of our Lord. Not far from here dwells a Giant, one *Slay-Good*, who does greatly annoy and maim those who proceed along this Way. He is Master of a number of thieves who molest Pilgrims however they are able.”

*Great* “This being the Lord’s Battle, we are willing to engage the Foe. Let us arm ourselves with the weapons of Righteousness for the right hand and the left [2 Cor.6:7] and go forth for the Honor of our King and the Good of our Brethren.”

*Chr.* “We are with you as one man in this. Come, *Matthew, Samuel, Joseph*, gird on your Swords and join with us (for you must know that, by now, they had grown to be young men who could stand their own against the Evil One [I Jn.2:14]). *James*, stay here with your Mother, *Mercy*, and the daughters of these brave men and do not cease to lift up your voices on High so that we might not be overwhelmed in the Valley of conflict below” [Ex.17:11-13].

Thus they went forth, a small Company, though as Awesome as an Army with Banners, to the place where he was known to inhabit. There they discovered him with a Pilgrim, *Feeble-mind*, in his hands whom his servants had waylaid along the Path. Just as they came upon him, he was stripping him of his Treasures and preparing to do away with him altogether.

*Hon.* “O *Slay-Good*, release your prisoner and let him Go! Today shall be the end of your Wickedness, for we have come out against you in the Name of the Lord of the Way!”

Then did the Giant drop the Pilgrim from his grasp and move to the entrance of his Cave, demanding who they were and what they wanted.

*Great* “We are Servants of the King of kings and have come forth

against you to revenge the Quarrel of the many Pilgrims you have slain when you have dragged them from the King’s Highway. Therefore, today you shall fall at our hands, and your evil will perish with you.”

*Slay.* “Assault me you may. Slay me you cannot, for it is my Nature to Slay-Good, and no one can deliver themselves out of my hand.” And with that, he rushed upon them, raging and blaspheming most fearfully. But they made their resistance in the Strength of the Lord and the Power of His Might [Eph.6:10] and so engaged him with flashing Swords.

Now the Battle was fierce, for the death of the one meant the victory of the other. He assailed them with nothing but Evil, and they faced him with nothing but Good, for this is how Pilgrims are used to conduct their own resistance [Rom.12:21].

At times it appeared that the Brethren would prevail, and many blows were landed to his weakening and wounding. Then, he seemed to recover somewhat and came upon them again with mounted fury, driving them back with amazing force. It was at these times that the Family at the Inn had grown slack in their crying unto God on their behalf.

By and by, though, as the Lord would have it, they made their advance upon him, cutting and piercing fearlessly so that the Giant stumbled to the ground. Then, while *Christian* and his Boys assailed him from the front, the other five rushed upon him from the sides and eventually had his head off.

Quickly the men moved to the side of *Feeble-mind* and, raising him up, assisted him to the Inn and attended to him there where all heard his story.

*Feeble.* “I am greatly indebted to you, dear Brethren, for your Valiant efforts on my behalf, and to you, my Sisters and children, for your faithful prayers for my deliverance. My name you know and I come from the town of Uncertain.

“Though I am a man of no strength of body or mind, yet I am set upon Pilgrimage even if I need to crawl the length of the Journey. I have met with many kindnesses along the Way, from our Lord who did not despise my Feeble-mind and from his Servants who have shown me consideration according to the Word of their Master [I Thess.5:4].

“When I came up to Assault Lane, this Giant met me there and took me captive to do what he might with me. Though I was persuaded that he could not kill me, for I have heard that no Pilgrim who is taken by violent hands can die by the Enemy’s craft who keeps himself whole-hearted for his Prince [Rom.8:35-39].

“And so you see, I have been robbed, to be sure, but I have escaped with my life by the Providence of God and by your noteworthy efforts for which I thank My King as the Author and yourselves as the means.

“I expect to meet other dangers along my Way, but I have determined this; to Run when I can, to Walk when I cannot Run, and to Crawl when I cannot Walk. As for me, I thank Him that He Loves me. I am set; my Way is before me and my heart is fixed beyond that River which has no bridge, though I am, as you can see, a man of *Feeble-mind*.”

*Gaius* “Be of good Cheer, Sir, you are welcome to me, my House, and these my Brethren. Whatever we have which can be of service and comfort to you upon your Journey, we will do with a willing mind.”

*Feeble*. “This is an unexpected Favor, like the Sun shining out of a dark cloud. For when the Giant had determined my destruction, God has so turned my sorrow into joy.”

So he came to abide with them very comfortably which ministered to his upbuilding and strength of soul. Now after many months had passed (for you must not imagine that this Pilgrimage is a day’s Journey), it came into *Christian* and *Christianna*’s mind that their Sons should take to themselves wives. So with intention of discussing such, they asked to see their Host and that Old Disciple privately to gain their consent.

*Chr*. “My dear Brothers, beloved by God and highly esteemed by us [Phil.2:3, 4], we are led of the Lord to approach you both with a very important matter. It concerns the marriage of our sons to true Daughters of Zion. And, since we know of none fairer in all the land than your Daughters [Job 42:15], we humbly request that you consider whether it would be fitting in the sight of God for them to be joined to our *Samuel*, *Joseph*, and *James* as wives.”

*Gaius* “Dear Brother, and my fair Sister, in the time I have

known you and your Family, it has pleased me very well to have made your acquaintance by the tender Mercies of the Most High. And, I must confess, that it would be my greatest joy to see my Daughter joined as wife to your Son.”

*Mnason* “And I, as well, hold you and yours in highest esteem. The Boys, though in their youth, have shown themselves to be an example of those who believe [I Tim.4:12]. I do therefore agree with my Brother, so that my heart overflows with joy at the prospect. With all good will, then, let it be so.”

*Gaius* “Let us call the Girls and consult their wishes in the matter” [Gen.24:57]. And so, they had *Grace*, *Phoebe*, and *Martha* into their midst and set before them their discussion and conclusion, asking them whether they would be willing. Each was asked in turn, “Will you go with this man?”; to which each replied, “I will go” [Gen.24:58]. And so the matter was concluded and *Christian* and his Wife went next to discuss with their Sons.

First was called *Matthew*, for he was the eldest. His Father discussed with him while *Christianna* drew *Mercy* aside to speak upon her heart about the matter. And it went thus with them.

*Chr*. “My Son, your Mother and I have been much in prayer about all of our Children, that all of you might be guided along this Way with the Lord’s fullest Blessing. We have considered carefully those things which will minister to your everlasting good and have endeavored, by the Grace of God, to provide whatever we can to ensure your progress in Life and Godliness.

“It has entered our hearts that your further development along this Path will be greatly helped and enriched by traveling with a Godly Companion, one that will cleave unto you as a true Helpmeet. After careful reflection for some years now, we have observed consistent, godly, and self-denying character in one fair Virgin above all the rest which we believe will prove to be a loving and faithful bride for you.

“It is *Mercy* that I speak of. Would you be pleased to take her to yourself as wife?”

Now, this approach came as no surprise to the Boy as he knew that his Parents desired nothing but his good and had been carefully

looking out for this most important decision of life in his behalf. He, as well, had been observing the behavior and character of various young maidens, and noting those of excellence who feared the Lord. So, his reply came not from impulse, but from studied reflection and prayerful seeking of the Lord's will himself.

*Matt.* "Father, I am so very blessed to have godly Parents as I do. Your own wisdom and experience far exceeds my own, and I trust your judgment wholeheartedly. I could not wish for anything more than your blessing and approval upon this single most important decision in this life.

"My heart is full and rejoices in your loving care all through my life even to this point. Your Counsel is well pleasing to my soul and, I must say, so is *Mercy* unto me as well. I know of no other Maiden who so faithfully devotes herself to the Glory of our Lord and to the good of all than she. I therefore accept this proposal with a glad and willing heart."

And so it was with *Matthew*. Now *Christianna* at the same time was making her will known unto *Mercy*, saying,

*Channa.* "Dearest *Mercy*, my loving Sister and darling Daughter, we have walked in this Way together for several years now with sweetest Fellowship and delight. We have so much benefited by your devoted and lowly service to one and all. We love you, Dearest, with all of our hearts.

"It is because of this that we wish to draw you into an even closer relationship than we have known as an enduring member of our family. *Mercy* dear, you are a lovely and true Daughter of Jerusalem and the time has come for Love [S.of S.2:7].

"We wish above all else that you might consent to become the bride of our *Matthew*. What, Dearest, do you think of this? May the Lord guide you in your reply."

*Mercy* "My soul magnifies the Lord, and my spirit rejoices in God my Savior. For He has regarded the humble state of His maidservant. The Mighty One has done great things for me and His Mercy is on those who fear Him [Lk.1:46-50]. I am Blessed above many. "How my soul does Bless the Lord for all His Mercies! How I praise Him for Tender Lovingkindness that never fails! How thankful I am for you and your dear Husband who have been more than Mother and Father to me!

"Do I love you? A thousand times, yes! Do I love your Family? More than that of my birth! And do I love your *Matthew*? Yes, with all my heart; a man who greatly fears the Lord, who has grown strong in His Word, and whose heart is set on Pilgrimage.

"If his lips will but say, 'Arise, my darling, and come along!' [S.of S.2:10], my heart will say, 'Let his left hand be under my head and his right hand embrace me' [S.of S.8:3]. I will come, dearest *Christianna*, I will come!"

Now I saw then that they embraced with tears of Joy at the blessed prospect before them and went forth to bring the glad tidings to *Christian* and *Matthew* who, as well, rejoiced to convey their own. Thus the arrangements were settled and a date fixed for the wedding along with their remaining Sons and Daughters to whom they spoke in similar manner.

The glad day having come, and the Virgins having veiled themselves before their bridegrooms and the assembled brethren [Gen.24:65], the Fathers began their address and solemn charge to their beloved Children.

*Chr.* "My dearly beloved Sons, hear the words of a Father on this, the day of the rejoicing of your hearts [S.of S.3:11]. You yourselves know the manner of our life from the day we set forth from our City of Destruction up to today upon this Narrow Way. Be imitators of us as we also imitate Christ [I Cor.11:1].

"For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the Grace of God, we have conducted ourselves in the world, and especially toward you [2 Cor.1:12]. Therefore, heed well the instruction of a Father and do not forsake the teaching of your Mother [Prov.1:8].

"These Daughters of Zion whom you are taking as your Wives are a crown unto your head and blessing to your souls [Prov.12:4]. Therefore, Cherish them for they are your glory [Eph.5:29; I Cor.11:7]. Delight in them at all times and be exhilarated always with their love [Prov.5:19].

"They are Helpers indeed, but not your slaves [Gen.2:18]. Property never, but the very bone of your bone and flesh of your flesh [Gen.2:23]. Love them! Cherish and nourish them! Be unto them as

Christ your Lord is unto His Church; loving, devoted, laying down your lives for them [Eph.5:25-33].

“You are their Providers and Guides. Supply their every needs with diligent tenderness and kindly wisdom [I Tim.5:8; I Cor.14:35]. They are fashioned by God as weaker vessels, therefore treat them with gentle understanding, holding them in highest esteem as fellow heirs of a common Grace of Life [I Pet.3:7].

“If you will do these things, my Sons, and God helping you, you and your beloved brides will never regret this day and your prayers shall never go unheeded.

“Now, may the Lord bless you, and keep you; the Lord make His face to shine upon you, and be gracious to you, and give you peace; both now and unto Endless Day [Num.6:24-26]. Amen and Amen.”

*Gaius* “And unto you, dearest Daughters, beloved by your Father above and by your Fathers below, hearken unto my voice for I speak Noble things and the opening of my lips is in Truth. This day my heart overflows with a good theme.

“Listen, O Daughters, give attention and incline your ear: Forget your people and your father’s house; then the King will desire your beauty. Because He is your Lord, bow down to Him. In place of your fathers will be your sons; you shall make them princes in all the earth [Ps.45:10, 11,16].

“O you, our precious Jewels, today we commit you into the bosoms of your beloved Husbands to cleave to them all your days. In the sight of our God and in the sight of all the Saints, your Gentle and Quiet spirits testify to your godly fear before all [I Pet.3:4]. Let this imperishable quality be your adornment with the Grace of Submission unto your husbands, even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him, lord [I Pet.3:4-6].

“May contention be far from you but rather Prudence be your portion! [Prov.19:13, 14]. May you, like *Ruth*, be known abroad as women of excellence! [Ruth 3:11]. And now, we commend you to God and the Word of His Grace which is able to build you up and Save you as you abide in that blessed womanly sphere assigned by your God with Faith and Charity and Holiness with Discretion” [Acts 20:32; I Tim.2:15].

*Mnason* “Darling Daughters, whom we have loved and labored for night and day to this end, that you might become women of Virtue as you are today; never grow Slack in your Noble calling. Do your Husbands good and not evil all the days of your lives [Prov.31:12].

“May they ever have cause to trust you! May your Labors for the blessing of the Household and the relief of the Poor not be few! May the Teaching of kindness flow with Wisdom from your lips! May your Children rise up and bless you! May your Husbands praise you for excelling the maids of earth as a Lily is found among thorns! [Prov.31:10-31; S.of S.2:2].

“We, your fathers, are full of Joy this day. We have fashioned you, our Arrows, with tender careful devotion all these years; and today, we release you from our Bows knowing that you will fly Straight and True to the intended mark [Ps.127:3-5].

“Bless you, our Daughters! And bless you, our Sons! This is indeed the day of the Gladness of our hearts! Let us therefore make merry, and rejoice in it for His Lovingkindness is everlasting upon the Israel of God!”

And so, the Couples exchanged solemn Vows, pledging themselves by Covenant to each other in the sight of God and man with the determination that what God had joined together, no man would ever put asunder [Mt.19:6].

O, and then, can you imagine what festivity followed! There was embracing, blessings, prayers, songs of rapture, sharing of Communion, with Peace and Joy flowing like rivers accompanied by gifts of love showered in abundance. They shared their meal together with gladness and sincerity of heart amidst Thanks and Praise to the Almighty all that day and into the evening time until each retired to their rest.

Well, it was not long afterwards that the Company, with their four new families, prepared to depart the Inn of good *Gaius*. So the Brethren endeavored to pay their Host the customary fees for his entertainment of them. But he declined, answering them thus,

*Gaius* “At my Inn, it is not the practice for my guests to pay for their stay. I board my lodgers by the year and look to the good Samaritan for my wages, who has promised to repay me fully upon His return”

[Lk.10:33-35].

*Great* “Beloved, you have done faithfully in what you are doing for the Brethren, even though they are strangers to you. They have borne witness of your Love before the Church as we ourselves do. You have done well in sending us upon our Journey as you have [3 Jn.5, 6] and our Lord will surely repay all that you have spent and more so, for the sake of His Name and the comfort of His saints.

“We are grateful and indebted beyond measure for your innumerable kindnesses to us. And so, though it be with tears of love, we will now continue on the Way to the City above.”

And so, with much embracing, they departed each other’s company with a kiss of love and God’s speed along the Path. Now, as they were taking their leave, Mr. *Feeble-mind* lingered at the doorway as if he would not proceed with them, which, when they had noticed it, they asked him the reason.

*Feeble* “Woe is me! For I am not strong and bold as you are. I am but a weak man and therefore choose to go alone so as not to be a Burden to your Progress. I know little of the Truth and am offended and weakened by that which others can bear.

“I am so weak that sometimes, if I hear others rejoice, it troubles me, because I cannot do the same. I am like a sick man among the healthy so I feel it best not to trouble you.”

*Hon.* “Nay! Do not say so, my brother. We have a commission from our Lord to comfort the Feeble-minded and help the weak [I Thess.5:14]. No, we protest. You must come along with us.”

*Faith.* “Indeed, we will wait for you and lend you whatever help we may, only come with us. We will deny ourselves of things, both of our own Opinions as well as in Practical preference for your sake” [Rom.14; I Cor.8].

*Great* “Yes, brother, we shall not enter into doubtful Disputes with you in order to judge your Opinions [Rom.14:1]. You shall not be despised by this Company but rather loved and assisted by one and all.”

Now while they were engaged in this discussion, a Pilgrim passed by the door of the Inn. He was, by name, *Ready-to-halt*, and moved about by means of Crutches. As soon as he came into view, *Feeble-mind* cried out

with what almost seemed to be joy. The two of them fell into warm discussion and immediately found in each other similar spirits and a common nature. This they found to be of great encouragement to both and so consented to travel together with the Company which gladdened them all.

# 19

## EVANGELIST & VANITY FAIR

Greatly blessed as they were at the house of good *Gaius* and *Mnason*, they nevertheless went forth with renewed eagerness upon the Upward Way. And so they moved together, in that sweetness of fellowship born of the love of God having been poured out in their hearts through the Holy Spirit [Rom.5:5].

They had not traveled far when, glancing behind, they saw one approaching them as if to join with them. Now when *Christian* and *Faithful* recognized him, they both exclaimed at once, "Praise the Lord! It is our good friend *Evangelist!*"

And so it was. He drew near and greeted them thus, "Peace be with you, dearly Beloved, and Peace be to these your Families and Brethren."

*Chr.* "Welcome, welcome, my good *Evangelist*; the sight of you brings to my remembrance your ancient kindness and unwearied laboring for our Eternal Good."

They all, then, with goodwill and gladness, greeted their Beloved Brother and fellow laborer. After introductions and exchange of affection, they related each one what they had met with upon the Way; the Comforts and Trials, their Stumblings and Victories, and how they had performed acts of Righteousness, obtained Promises, escaped the edge of the sword, and were made Strong from their weakness [Heb.11:33, 34].

*Evang.* "In all these things I rejoice that you have endured as seeing Him who is unseen [Heb.11:27]. I am glad, both for your sakes and for mine. I have sowed, and you have reaped, and the Day is coming when he who sows and he who reaps shall rejoice together [Jn.4:36]; that is, if you endure; for in due time we shall reap if we do not faint [Gal.6:9].

"The Crown is before you, and it is an incorruptible one; so run, that you may obtain it [I Cor.9:24-27]; for there are some who have it taken from them by failing to hold it fast [Rev.3:11]. You are not yet out of the gunshot of the Devil: You have not yet resisted unto Blood, in your striving against Sin [Heb.12:4].

"Let the Kingdom always be before you, and believe steadfastly on the things Above. Let nothing here Below get within you: And above all, watch over your own hearts with all diligence [Prov.4:23], for it is surely a deceitful and desperately wicked thing more than anything else [Jer.17:9]. Set your faces like a flint; you have all the power in Heaven and Earth on your side."

Then did the Company thank him for the Exhortation and desired that he might further encourage them along the Way, for they knew him to be a Prophet and could unfold to them what they might meet ahead and how to Overcome. So he consented and continued, saying,

*Evang.* "My Brethren, you have heard in the Words of Truth, the Gospel, that through many Tribulations we must enter into the Kingdom of Heaven [Acts 14:22]. And again, that in every City, Bonds and Afflictions await you [Acts 20:23]. You cannot therefore expect that you will go long on your Pilgrimage without meeting with such in one form or another.

"By your Testimonies, you can see that you have met with some of these things already, but there are more to immediately follow. Just before you lies a Town whose inhabitants despise the Lord of the Way and any who travel upon it. They will be after you, soul and body, and one of you will seal his testimony with his own Blood; but be Faithful unto Death, and the King will give you the Crown of Life [Rev.2:10].

"He who will die there, though his death will be unnatural and his pains perhaps great, will actually be the more blessed among you. He will be first to reach the Heavenly City and will thus be spared many of the other miseries that the rest will meet in the remaining Journey.

"When you are therefore come to the Town, be on the Alert, stand firm in the Faith, act like Men, be Strong [I Cor.16:13]. And in

everything, commit the keeping of your souls to a Faithful Creator in your well-doing" [I Pet.4:19].

Such words ministered a sober composure mingled with thanks unto their souls and they expressed their gratitude sincerely to their Friend and took their leave of him as he returned to greet the host of the Inn. Now they determined among themselves in light of the awaiting troubles, that *Faithful* and *Christian* should lead the Company followed by old Mr. *Honest*, *Feeble-mind*, and *Ready-to-Halt* who were to go before the Women and Young Men, with *Great-Heart* bringing up the rear.

Then I saw in my dream that they presently approached the Town that had been described to them. Now the name of the Town is Vanity, and at the Town is held a Fair all the year long called Vanity Fair. It is named so because that Town is lighter than Vanity [Isa.40:17]; and because all that is sold there is Vanity [Eccl.1:2].

This Fair is of no recent origin, but has stood from ancient times. It came about in this way. It was observed by *Apollyon*, *Beelzebub*, and *Legion*, that the Path to the Heavenly City lay right through the center of Vanity, and they therefore determined to erect a Fair to, if possible, ensnare and waylay Pilgrims.

At this Fair are all manner of merchandise sold, such as houses, lands, trades, honors, amusements, countries, kingdoms, lusts, and pleasures. Added to these are delights of all sorts like whores, wives, husbands, children, masters, servants, reverends (yes, they also are for sale), blood, souls, gadgets, silver, gold, wines, pearls, precious stones, and anything else imaginable that this World has to offer.

Moreover, at this Fair at all times are to be seen juggling, cheats, games, plays, fools, apes, and rouges, and that of every kind. Here are to be seen also thefts, murders, adulteries, liars, and all of a blood-red color.

The Fair was laid out by several rows or streets where particular wares would be most readily found. There is the British row, the French row, The American row, the German row, the African row, and many more besides. But those who have gained more than others by selling their wares are the Broad Ways of *Pagan*, *Pope*, and *Psychos*.

You must know that if one would avoid going through this Fair, he must go out of this world altogether [I Cor.5:10]. Even the Prince of

princes Himself, when here, passed through this Town to His own Country. And the records have it that it was *Beelzebub*, the Chief Lord of the Fair, that invited Him to buy of his Vanities. In fact, he showed Him all the Kingdoms of the World and their wares, and even would have made Him Lord of the Fair if only He had agreed to worship him as He went through the Town [Mt.4:8, 9]. But that Blessed One had no desire for his vain merchandise and left that place without paying so much as one coin for any of it.

By this time the Pilgrims were come to the outskirts of the Town and proceeded on their Way through its midst. As soon as they had entered, all the people of the Fair, at first, gazed upon them in amazement and then began a great clamor and disturbance, and that was for three reasons.

First, the Pilgrims were clothed with Garments which were completely unlike those of any who traded at the Fair. Some said they were fools; some called them mad; while others were offended by their outlandish attire.

Secondly, because they were men of the World, they wondered at their speech; for few could understand what they said (for you must know that naturally they spoke the language of Canaan). So from one end of the Fair to the other, they seemed like Barbarians to one another.

Thirdly, which was a cause of great amusement to the Merchandisers, the Pilgrims had no interest to even look at their wares. If they were asked to come and buy, they stopped up their ears [Isa.33:15] and cried out, "Turn away my eyes from beholding Vanity" [Ps.119:37] while lifting their eyes Heavenward to show that their trade was in the things Above.

Now one of them, when he saw them doing this, mockingly said, "What will you buy?" One and all looked soberly upon him and *Faithful* replied, "We buy the Truth" [Prov.23:23]. At this reply, the people of the Town despised them all the more; some mocking, some reviling, with others who called upon all to smite them. But *Faithful* cried out boldly, "Men, why do you do these things? We preach the Gospel to you that you should turn from these Vanities unto the Living God who made heaven and earth!" [Acts14:15].

That statement sent the entire Fair into a great confusion and disturbance, one saying this while another said that. Word was presently sent to the Great One of the Fair who quickly came down and sent some of his most trusty friends to examine them as to who they were and where they were going.

When they replied that they were Pilgrims going to their own Country and that they had done nothing to abuse or molest the citizens of the Town but had only spoken the Word of God, they reviled them and refused to believe their words. Orders were then given that they should be arrested, beaten, smeared with dirt, and placed in the Cages that they might be made a Spectacle to all the men of the Fair.

“And see to it that these two at the head of this miserable bunch of madmen be placed in a separate Cage and punished more severely, for this one is clad in armor from head to toe and certainly means to do us harm, and the other insults us with his high-sounding words of nonsense. As for the rest, they are nothing more than old men, cripples, and escorts of women and young boys. Take them away!”

So it was that *Christian* and *Faithful* were treated the more harshly and imprisoned separately from the rest. They therefore lay there exposed to all manner of their sport, malice, or revenge while the Great One of the Fair laughed them to scorn for all that came upon them. **But** the Pilgrims bore all their reproaches patiently, not returning insult for insult but rather blessing instead and showing kindness for injuries done to them [Rom.12:16]. Some of the men of the Fair that were more observing and less prejudiced, began to reprove the baser sort for their continual abuses to the Brethren.

This did greatly raise the anger of the multitude who accused them of being Sympathizers with the Pilgrims and as bad as they were and therefore worthy of the same punishments. To this, these men replied that they thought the Company to be harmless and, moreover, that there were many in the Fair who were worse culprits than them and ought to be placed in the Cages themselves.

Well this led to heated words being exchanged on both sides while the Saints bore all wisely and soberly. Eventually, however, they began to fight each other with many blows exchanged on both sides.

This, of course, was blamed upon the Innocent within the Cages and so they brought them out, beat them pitifully, and then bound them in Chains while leading them up and down in the Fair for an example and terror to others.

This, however, had just the opposite effect upon some of the citizens, for the Brethren bore their shame with such meekness and patience that several were won over to the side of the Pilgrims which only further enraged the rest. They then, in heated fury, threw them back into the Cages, threatening death to their two leaders for abusing and deluding the men of the Fair.

Now I saw in my dream that the women pleaded at the Throne of Grace saying, “O deliver not the soul of Your turtledove unto the multitude of the wicked: Forget not the Congregation of Your poor forever. Have respect unto the Covenant: For the dark places of the earth are full of the habitations of Cruelty. Forget not the voice of Your Enemies: the tumult of those that rise up against You increases continually” [Ps.74:19, 20, 23]. With these and many other such entreaties and supplications did they make their requests known to Him who is afflicted with all their afflictions [Isa.63:9].

*Behold Vanity Fair! The Pilgrims there  
Are chained, and stoned beside:  
Even so it was our Lord passed here,  
And on Mount Calvary died.*

It was not long until *Christian* and *Faithful* were dragged before the Magistrate unto Trial for their crimes as a terror and intimidation to the rest. This they did thinking that to destroy the Leaders would scatter the Flock, not knowing that the Blood of the Martyrs is the Seed of the Church.

They were therefore arraigned in Court and the Judge was one, Lord *Hate-Good*. The Crimes they were charged with, in summary, were these: That they were Enemies to and Disturbers of their Trade: That they had instigated Riots and Divisions in the Town, and had won over some of the Citizens to their dangerous Opinions in contempt of the law

of their Prince.

Then *Faithful* stood and presented his Defense. "I have only set myself against that which has set itself against the Most High. As for Disturbance, neither I nor any of my Companions have done so, being a People of Peace. Those who were won to us joined us by beholding our Truth and Innocence, and have only turned from the worse to the better. Finally, as to the King you talk of, since he is *Beelzebub*, the Enemy of our Lord, I defy him and all his angels."

Now this did nothing to the hearts of the Judge and Jury but arouse their hatred all the more. Therefore the Judge called for Witnesses against the accused. Now the first to testify was a rogue named *Envy* who proceeded in this way, "My Lord, despite this man's name of *Faithful*, he is one of the vilest men in our Country. He regards neither our Prince, People, Customs, nor Laws, but does nothing but try to fill the minds of men with disloyal notions of Principles of Faith and Holiness.

"In particular, I heard him once affirm that Christianity and the Customs of our Town were absolutely opposed to one another and could never be reconciled. By saying this, my Lord, he has at once condemned not only our manner of life, but ourselves as well."

Next was summoned a very bigoted man, by name, *Superstition*. He had this to say, "My Lord, I do not know much about this man except that he is a very troublesome fellow. I heard him say that our Religion was nothing and could never please God. In short, he states that our worship is in vain, that we are yet in our Sins, and finally will perish in Hell."

Now another was sworn in to give his account, namely, *Tell-Tale*, who brought this accusation against him. "My Lord, and you gentlemen all; this man I have known for long and I have heard him speak repeatedly against all that and all whom we hold dear. He has railed on our noble Prince *Beelzebub* as well as speaking with contempt against his honorable Friends whom we all know well and hold in high esteem.

"To be specific, he has maligned the Lord *Old-Man*, the Lord *Carnal-Delight*, the Lord *Luxurious*, my old Lord *Love-Lust*, the Lord *Vain-Glory*, Sir *Greedy*, with all the rest of our Nobility.

"And as if that was not enough, he said that he would be well

content if not one of these Noblemen should ever live in this Town again. And to crown it all, he has not been afraid to rail on you, my Lord, calling you an ungodly Villain. And with many other similar slanderous terms he has cast filth on most of the esteemed gentlemen of our Town."

*Hate-Good* "You Renegade, Heretic, and Traitor, do you hear what these honest gentlemen have witnessed against you?"

*Faith*. "May I speak a few words in my own defense?"

*Hate-Good* "Bah! You deserve to live no longer, but to be slain immediately upon the spot! Yet, so all men will know our Gentle and Impartial Judgment towards you and all men, let us see what you have to say."

*Now Faithful, act like a man, speak for your God;  
Fear not the Wicked's malice, nor their rod:  
Speak boldly, man, the Truth is on your side;  
Die for it, and to Life in triumph ride.*

*Faith*. "First, in answer to what Mr. *Envy* has spoken, I only said this; that any Rule, Laws, Customs, or People that are against the Word of God, make themselves enemies to Christianity. If I have spoken wrongly in this, convince me of my error and I shall recant.

"Secondly, in reference to Mr. *Superstition's* charges against me, I spoke simply this, that Divine Faith is required in the Worship of God which can only come from Divine Revelation. Therefore, whatever is thrust into the Worship of God that is not according to Divine Revelation is only a human Faith which will profit nothing, much less to the attaining of Eternal Life.

"Finally, as to what Mr. *Tell-Tale* has said, I repeat that the Prince of this Town, with all his rabble, attendants, and those mentioned by name, are more fit to be in Hell, than in this Town and Country. And so, may God have Mercy upon me."

Then the Judge called to the men of the Jury that they should consider carefully the testimony set before them and the Defense offered, because it was in their power to execute him or to spare his life. But first, he desired to remind them of the precedents set by their Law.

*Hate-Good* “There was an act made in the days of *Pharaoh* the Great, servant to our Prince, that severe measures be taken against the spread of a contrary Religion. Thus it was decreed that, lest they grow too strong for him, all the males should be thrown in the river [Ex.1:9, 10, 22].

“As well, the famous King *Nebuchadnezer* the Great, another of our Prince’s faithful servants, issued a decree that any who did not fall down and worship his Golden Image should be thrown into a Fiery Furnace [Dan.3:6].

“Nor are we to forget that in the time of *Darius*, any who dared to call upon any God but him was to be thrown into the Lion’s Den [Dan.6:7]. Now the substance of these Laws this Rebel has broken, not only in thought, which is enough to condemn him to the death, but also in word and deed. His conduct is therefore all the more intolerable.

“This man has committed serious Crimes against our Laws and Despises our Religion showing his Treason and is thus worthy to die the Death.”

Then the Jury went out to deliberate, being thirteen in number. Now after they had each one cast their vote against him, they returned a unanimous verdict of Guilty to the Judge; and they spoke thus:

*Blind-Man* “I see clearly that this man is a Heretic.”

*No-Good* “Away with such a fellow from the earth!”

*Malice* “I agree, for I hate the very looks of him!”

*Love-Lust* “I could never endure him to remain alive.”

*Live-Loose* “It is certain that he would always be condemning my Way.”

*Hot-Head* “Hang him! Kill him! Burn him to ashes!”

*High-Mind* “A miserable worthless fellow is he.”

*Enmity* “My heart rises against him.”

*Liar* “He is a Rogue.”

*Cruelty* “Hanging is too good for him. Let him suffer much.”

*Hate-Light* “Let us immediately remove him from our sight!”

*Rev. No-Word* “He causes Division, lacks Love, is Narrow-Minded, and is possessed of a wicked Intolerance which will ruin our Religion.”

*Bigotry* “Though I might have all the World given to me, I could

never be reconciled to him. Therefore, we all agree that he is Guilty and deserving of Death.”

They therefore arose as one man and beat and pushed *Christian* and *Faithful* out of the Court, raising a great cry of “Away with him! Away with him!” This, of course, aroused the entire Mob to join with them in dispatching *Faithful* and *Christian* to the place of Execution outside the Town.

In the midst of the raging fury of the multitudes leaving the center of Town, a few of those who had been won over to the Pilgrims’ Way came secretly to the Brethren who yet remained in their Cage. Quickly and quietly they released them from their Prison, saying, “Take Courage, Friends, we mean you no harm, for we, too, have come to Love the Lord of the Way by reason of your godly Testimony. With all haste, flee this City to the next [Mt.10:23] and we will do what we can for good *Christian* to rescue him from their wrath. With Eternal Thanks, we wish you God’s Speed.”

And having said this, they slipped unnoticed back into the side streets, leaving the former Captives to flee. Though distressed over the plight of *Faithful* and *Christian*, and while offering fervent prayer in their behalf [Jas.5:16], they hastened as best they could out of the Town into Safety and Freedom, and so escaped a similar fate by the Loving Providence of God.

In the meantime, the senseless fury of the Mob had reached its height. The two were driven before the maddened horde with all manner of insult and abuse. When they had reached the place of Execution, they first whipped them until they bled. Following this they cut their flesh with their swords to add to their torment.

It was after this that they threw *Christian* to the ground, saying, “Watch well what we shall do to this miserable companion of yours, condemned by our worthy Court. You shall taste of the same after your own Trial.” And, with that, they gave him several kicks and left him to behold the fate of *Faithful* at their hands.

Stones and curses alike flew at him thickly, bringing him to the ground. He was roughly jerked to his feet and tied to a stake as wood was piled around his feet. With no further ceremony, the fuel was set ablaze

to their great delight which at the last, burned him to ashes.

Now I saw, that there stood behind the multitude a Chariot which carried *Faithful* directly up through the clouds with the sound of Trumpet into the Heavenly City. But this, none else did see.

*Brave Faithful! Bravely done in word and deed!  
Judge, witnesses, and jury have, instead  
Of overcoming you, but shown their rage,  
When they are Dead, you'll Live, from age to age.*

Having witnessed all, *Christian* was next dragged and pushed back into the Town by the brutish throng and thrown into the Cage awaiting his own Trial on the following morn. There he lay in deep distress, pouring out his soul unto Him who is touched with the feelings of our infirmities.

Now these things worked strangely upon the hearts of some of the Townsmen. The violent outrage against *Faithful* and his patient endurance of the Shame along with that of *Christian* made certain of them pity them. And this Pity made them further reflect upon their own wickedness and caused some to smite upon their breasts in remorse.

One of these had awakened within himself a Hope of eternal life when he considered his own sin and the hatred of it. It worked in him that godly sorrow leading to that repentance of which there is no regret [2 Cor.7:10]. This one, therefore, came to *Christian's* Cage in the very early and dark hours of the morning while the Town yet slept, and his name was *Hopeful*.

*Hope*. "Psst! Wake up, good *Christian*, this hour your God has sent deliverance to you. Arise and flee this place, and I, by the Grace of God, will join with you. For I am now, by the Mercies of God, truly called *Hopeful*. Let us be going while men are at rest." And having said so, he managed to undo the lock and release his fellow.

*Chr*. "Thus it is that one dies to Testify of the Truth and another arises out of his ashes to be a Companion upon the Way of Life. Welcome, good brother, may the Lord reward you for your kindness shown to His name."

So the two of them made their way through the darkness unnoticed outside the Town, though they moved but slowly due to *Christian's* injuries. But at last they were beyond the hearing and sight of Vanity making their way by the light of the moon. It was then that *Christian* softly sang this song:

*Well, Faithful, you have faithfully professed  
Unto your Lord, with Him you shall be blessed;  
When faithless ones, with all their vain delights,  
Are crying out under their hellish plights:  
Sing, Faithful, sing, and let your Name survive;  
For though they killed you, you are yet alive.*

And so they hastened as best they could onward past villages and towns, in order to put distance between them and the men of the Fair, lest they pursue and overtake them. Thus they traveled the remaining hours of darkness until the Sunrise lightened their Path with its warming gladdening rays.

# 20

## HOPEFUL, BY-MEANS, & DEMAS

Now I saw in my dream, that the Company who had first escaped from the Cage in Vanity Fair proceeded directly to the very nearby town and entered therein. That Town, being one of ancient origin, had been placed there by the Lord of the Way for the safety of His Pilgrims. And the name of the Town was Refuge, into which, if a man would flee, he should be safe from the one seeking his life [Num.35:12].

So they did enter there and were saved from the vengeance of those in Vanity. Now, unknown to *Christian* and *Hopeful*, they had passed by this very Town during the darkness as they fled from Vanity, never realizing that their family and brethren were within. And so it was, that they became separated for a time.

Well, as I said, the Sun had risen upon them and they proceeded on in the fellowship of each other's company for some time. It was not long though before they overtook one who was traveling in their direction whose name, they later learned, was *By-Means*. And so they fell into conversation.

*Chr.* "Sir, how now? From where have you come and to where are you going?"

*Means* "Thank you, I'm fine on this sunshiny day. I am going to the Heavenly City having set out from the town of Fair-Speech." But he did not tell him his name.

*Chr.* "Fair-Speech? Is there any good thing that dwells there? [Prov.26:25]. I think that it is a rather wealthy place, is it not?"

*Means* "Why, it is indeed a prosperous place. Many of my rich

relations are there up to today; renowned men such as my Lord *Turn-about*, Mr. *Facing-both-ways*, Mr. *Anything*, and the Reverend of our congregation, Rev. *Two-tongues*. And I myself am the son of a boatsman, who looked one way and rowed the other, and I have followed in his trade."

*Chr.* "Are you a married man?"

*Means* "O yes, and to a very virtuous woman. She is the daughter of Lady *Pretense* and is very well cultured in all matters of the world. It is true, we differ somewhat from those of a more stricter religion, yet only in two small points. First, we never strive against Wind and Tide. And then, we are always most zealous for Religion when he goes in his Silver Slippers, when the sun shines and men applaud him."

*Chr.* "I am beginning to recognize you. Are you not *By-Means* from the town of Fair-Speech?"

*Means* "No, indeed, that is not my name. It is merely a reproachful nick-name given to me by some who cannot abide my wisdom of moving with the Current of this present Age. So far a good End is achieved, I see no harm in using *Means* to attain it."

*Chr.* "Here is where you are dreadfully mistaken. For any who imagine that the Ends justify the *Means* will be condemned [Rom.3:8]. If you will travel in our Company, you must go against Wind and Tide, not only when it is pleasant and comfortable. You must embrace true Religion when in his Silver Slippers as well as when in his Rags; when he goes with applause or whether bound in Irons."

*Means* "You must not lord it over my faith; leave me to my Liberty and be content to let me walk with you."

*Chr.* "Not a Step further, unless you will abandon your carnal ways."

*Means* "I shall never desert my old Principles, since they are harmless and profitable. Since you are of the more Rigid and Exclusive persuasion, I see that I must walk alone until meeting up with more agreeable company." So, they parted from each other and *By-Means* walked by himself for some time until three men came alongside him, all of whom made a very low bow before him and greeted him with flattering compliments. The names of the men were Mr. *Hold-the-world*, Mr. *Money-*

*love*, and Mr. *Save-all*. Now all of these had been his classmates taught by one, Mr. *Discontent*, the schoolmaster in Love-gain, which is the market town in the region of Coveting.

This man taught them the art of Getting, either by violence, flattery, lying, fraud, or by pretending to Religion. And all of them had learned the Art so well that any of them could have opened a school of their own.

*Means* “Let me tell you a thing or two about those fellows before us. They are of the type that are so rigid and so much love their own opinions and lightly set aside those of others, that they could never agree to travel with any who were not of their persuasion.”

*Save-all* “That’s very bad; but we read of some who are overly righteous and so ruin themselves [Eccl.7:16]. These men’s narrow mindedness causes them to judge and condemn all but themselves. Very bad indeed!”

*Means* “In fact! In their stubbornness they conclude that they must rush on their Journey in all weather. I am for waiting for Wind and Tide. They are for risking all for God at a moment, and I am for applying wisdom to take advantage of opportunities to secure my Estate. They are for holding on to their beliefs even though others oppose them. I am for Religion in so far as it is agreeable to the spirit of the Age. And they are content with Religion whether in Rags and Contempt, but I move with him when he is dressed ever so fine.”

*Hold-world* “Don’t give heed to them for a second! Hold fast your Principles, good friend, for I do count them but Fools. Let us be wise as Serpents. It is best to make hay while the sun shines. God sends sometimes rain and sometimes sunshine. If they be so foolish to travel in both, let us not join them, but move when we have fair weather.

“Since God has given us the good things of life, let us hold them to ourselves for His sake. *Abraham* and *Solomon* grew rich in Religion and *Job* tells us about the place of silver and gold [Job 28:1]. Let us therefore follow these good and prudent examples of godly men and be done with these fools.”

*Means* “Since we are all on Pilgrimage, as you see, let me put this question before you for our profit. Suppose a Minister or a Tradesman

should have an opportunity to attain some of the good things of this life and, in order to obtain them, he must become very zealous in some points of Religion. May he not use these Means to attain his End and still be a right and honest man?”

*Money-love* “Let me first of all address that of the Minister. Now, if his salary is but small and he has opportunity to increase his wealth by Religion, it is the Providence of God to do so. It has the approval of God. And for these reasons; (1) By becoming more studious and preaching more frequently, he not only increases the number of offerings taken, but becomes a more devoted Minister in the process. (2) If he has to change some of his Principles to attract a larger congregation, this is of no harm, provided, of course, that he has a Call. It is a good thing to address a larger congregation so that more men come under the influence of Religion. It shows that the Minister is not narrow minded and judgmental and thus more fit for his ministerial duties, since he accommodates a wider audience for his sermons.

“I conclude, therefore, that a Minister who changes his small gain for great should not be judged as covetous, but rather be counted as one that pursues his Call and the opportunity put into his hand by God. Now, concerning the Tradesman, if his business is faring but poorly, I see no harm in his becoming Religious in order to improve his station in life. Why, he might perhaps get a rich wife, improve his business, and obtain more and far better customers.

“Now this is acceptable because to become Religious is a virtue, by whatever Means a man may become so. And who could object against getting a rich wife or more customers in one’s shop by doing so?”

“For if a man gets these by becoming Religious, he gets good things from those that are good by becoming good himself! So, here is a good Wife, and good Customers, and good Gain, and all these by becoming Religious, which is good! Therefore, to become religious to get all of these, is a good and profitable Design.”

This answer, you can well imagine, was highly applauded by them all and considered sound in reason and advantageous in application. They further thought that it could be refuted by no one, it being so excellent a reply. Thus they jointly agreed to assault *Christian* and *Hopeful*

with the same question, and Mr. *Hold-the-world* was chosen to approach them and ask their reply. And so he did and thus did they reply:

*Chr.* “Even a babe in Religion could answer ten thousand such questions. For, if it is unlawful to follow Christ in order to receive loaves as our Lord has said [Jn.6:26, 27], how much more abominable is it to use Him and Religion as a pretense to get and enjoy the World? There are none other than Heathen, Hypocrites, Devils, and Witches who are of this opinion.

“Look at the Heathen, *Hamor* and *Shechem*. They had a mind to gain the daughters and cattle of *Jacob* and saw that there was no way to get them except to be circumcised. And so they adopted Religion as a pretense in order to gain their desire [Gen.34:20-23].

“The Hypocritical Pharisees were also of this Religion: Long Prayers were their Pretense; but to gain widow’s houses was their Intent which led to their even greater damnation [Lk.20:46, 47]. And as if this were not enough, they went so far as to sell Religious Goods in the very Temple of God, thus making it into a den of Thieves! [Mt.21:12, 13].

“*Judas*, the Devil [Jn.6:70, 71] practiced this Religion. He was religious for the bag, that he might possess what was therein [Jn.12:6]; but he was lost, cast away, and the very Son of Perdition [Jn.17:12].

“Nor let me fail to mention *Simon* the Witch who followed in this Religion too; he would have the Holy Spirit, though he wickedly imagined that he could pay to receive this Power. And why did he want Religion if not to maintain his own status as the Imposter, ‘Great Power of God’? [Acts 8:9-11, 19-23].

“Furthermore, any man who takes up Religion for the World, will throw away Religion for the World. For as surely as *Judas* became religious in order to gain the World, so surely did he sell his Religion and his Master for the same.

“Therefore, to answer your question in the manner that you have answered it, only proves that you are Heathens, Hypocrites, and Devils; and your Reward will be according to your Works.”

Then they stood staring at one another, but their mouths were closed by reason of the soundness of *Christian’s* arguments. And so, Mr. *By-Means* and Company staggered and drew back, not willing to walk with

them again.

*Chr.* “If these men cannot stand before the sentence of men, what will they do with the sentence of God? And if they have nothing to reply when dealt with by vessels of Clay, what will they do when they shall be rebuked by the flames of a devouring Fire?”

And thus it was that the Two proceeded on their Way while the Four kept quite to themselves, having been shamed by the Pilgrim’s reasoning.

I saw then in my dream that they came upon a Silver Mine just a little off the road. From there, one whose name was *Demas* called to them in a gentlemanly way, “Ho! Turn aside here and I will show you a Silver Mine where, for only a small effort, you can richly provide Treasure for your profit.”

*Hope.* “Brother, let’s go and see!”

*Chr.* “Not I. I have heard of this place before now and how many have been slain herein. Besides, Treasure is a Snare to those who seek it which chokes the Word [Mt.13:22]. No indeed, I will abide by what is written of old, ‘The Law of Thy mouth is better to me than thousands of gold and silver pieces’ [Ps.119:72]. Then he called to *Demas*, “Isn’t that place dangerous and has hindered many in their Pilgrimage?”

*Demas* “O, not very dangerous, except to those who are careless” (but he blushed as he spoke). “Do come and see.”

*Chr.* “You are an Enemy to the right ways of the Lord of Heaven and have already been condemned by one of His Majesty’s Judges [2 Tim.4:10]. And would you now bring us into the same condemnation?”

*Demas* “No, my brothers, for I am one of you and have *Abraham* for my father. I too, am on the Pilgrim Way.”

*Chr.* “Its not true. I know you; *Gehazi* [2 Kings 5:20-27] was your great grandfather, and *Judas* your father [Mt.26:14, 15], and you have followed in their steps. Your father was hanged for a traitor [Mt.27:1-6] and you deserve no better reward. Your longing after riches has already led you into temptation and a snare and many foolish and harmful desires which have plunged men into ruin and destruction. You yourself have wandered away from the faith, are off the Path of Life, and surely will

meet a disastrous end [I Tim.6:9, 10]. Since you will not be persuaded of the Truth, we must leave you to your fate.”

So the Two passed him by and left him to his Silver Mine as he did not join with them on the Way. Now, it was not long afterwards that Mr. *By-Means* and his Company came in sight of *Demas* and immediately proceeded to gaze upon his Mine at the first invitation.

Now, whether they fell into the pit by looking over the brink, or whether they went down to dig, or whether they were smothered by the mists and dampness that commonly arise out of the place, I don't know. But this I observed, that they were never seen again in the Way. Then *Christian* did sing:

*By-Means and Silver Demas both agree;  
One calls, the other runs, that he may be  
A Sharer in his Riches, so these two  
Join hands with the World, and Life they loose.*

Just on the other side of this plain, the Pilgrims came upon what appeared to be a strange sort of Monument, seemingly in the shape of a woman with an inscription written thereupon. It read, “Remember Lot's wife” [Lk.17:32]. Then they concluded that it surely must be that Pillar of Salt into which Lot's wife was turned for looking back on Sodom with a covetous heart.

*Hope*. “Ah! This might have been me for my foolish desire to behold *Demas'* Silver. I wonder what the difference is between her sin and mine? She only looked back whereas I had the desire to see. Let Grace be adored, and let me be ashamed that ever such a thing should be in my heart. Let this serve as a caution to us, that we ourselves should not be such an example to others.”

Soon the Way came to a pleasant River which *David* called the River of God [Ps.65:9] but *Ezekiel*, the River from the Sanctuary [Ezek.47:12]. Now along the banks were green Trees that bore all manner of fruit whose leaves were good for Medicine, growing beside a peaceful Meadow where they could rest in safety [Ps.23:2]. This kindness from their Lord made them to sing:

*Behold, how these Crystal Streams do glide  
To comfort Pilgrims by the highway side.  
The Meadows green, besides their fragrant smell,  
Yield dainties for them: And he that can tell  
What pleasant Fruit, yea, Leaves, these Trees do yield,  
Will soon sell all, that he may buy this Field.*

Now I saw in my dream that the River and the Way did continue for a time side by side but eventually parted which caused some sadness to the Travelers. And not only that, but the Way from the River became increasingly rough so that their feet soon became tender and uncomfortable.

So the Souls of the Pilgrims were much discouraged, because of the Way [Num.21:4]. Therefore, as they went on, they wished for a better Way, to hasten their Progress with ease. It was then that they came upon a Meadow with an entrance through the fence, just to their left.

*Chr*. “Ho! Here lies a path according to my wish where the going is easier. And it lies along our Way! Come, good *Hopeful*, let us walk therein and the sooner we shall join up with my Wife, Family, and the Brethren who escaped your Town before us” (for he imagined that they had continued on their Way, not knowing that they were yet in the City of Refuge).

*Hope*. “But what if this Path should lead us out of the Way?”

*Chr*. “That is not likely; look, does it not go alongside the Way?”

And so, being persuaded by his companion, they crossed over together and entered into that comfortable land known as *By-Path-Meadow*. Indeed, they found it very easy for their feet and even encountered another walking in this path ahead of them. Now they called out after him (his name was *Vain-Confidence*) and asked him if this path did not lead to the Heavenly City, to which he replied that it did.

Thus was *Christian* made even more confident that his choice was justified. Not long, however, and the Night came on so that the man was lost sight of in the darkness. It then happened that the man, walking vain-confidently in the dark, fell into a deep Pit [Isa.9:16] and was dashed

to pieces with his fall.

The Two, hearing him fall, called out to him but they heard no reply except groaning from within the earth. Then said *Hopeful*, "Where are we now?" At this *Christian* fell silent, thinking that he had misled his brother out of the Way. Just then, a terrible storm broke upon their heads, with lightening and thundering most dreadfully; and the water began to rise with the downpour.

*Hope.* "O, that I had kept on My Way!"

*Chr.* "Good brother, do not be offended, I am sorry I have brought you out of the Way and placed you in such Danger. Please, forgive me, I did not do it out of an evil intent, but out of foolish desire for my own ease."

*Hope.* "I was afraid to do as you said from the beginning and that is why I gave you that gentle caution. I would have spoken more plainly, but you are older than I. But, yes, be comforted, I do forgive you."

*Chr.* "I am glad to have with me such a merciful brother. But we must not stand here like this. Let us try to go back again."

So they proceeded to return as best they could, *Hopeful* leading the way lest *Christian* due to his distressed mind might be misled again. As they moved through the Night they heard a Voice for their Encouragement, saying, "Let your heart be towards the Highway; even the Way that you went, turn again" [Jer.31:21].

But by this time the Waters were greatly risen which made the way back very dangerous. (Then I thought that it is easier going out of the Way when once we are in, than going in when we are out). Yet they endeavored to go back, but it was so dark, and the Flood was so high, that they were nearly drowned nine or ten times. At last, not being able to reach the gate where they left the Path, they sat down under a tree, and being wearied, fell asleep.

*The Pilgrims now, to gratify the Flesh,  
Will seek its Ease; but O! how they afresh  
Do thereby plunge themselves into Grief anew!  
They who seek to please the Flesh, themselves undo.*

# 21

## DOUBTING CASTLE & GIANT DESPAIR

Now, there was, not far from the place where they lay down, a castle, called Doubting-Castle owned by Giant *Despair*. It was his very grounds that they were trespassing on and, as he inspected his land early that morning, he discovered the Two Pilgrims. He then, with a grim and surly voice, roughly awakened them and, seeing that they were Pilgrims, treated them the more harshly for Trespassing.

By force they were taken captive by him to his castle and thrown into a Dungeon, one most nasty and stinking to their spirits. Here they lay in dense darkness, how long, they knew not, for they could not see the Light of day. Neither did they taste one bit of bread, or drop of water, nor did any visit or ask after their welfare, but were removed far from Friends and Acquaintance [Ps.88].

Now the Giant had a wife, and her name was *Doubtful*. So that night as he went to bed, he told her of the Trespassers in the Dungeon and asked what further should be done with them. She, being one with her husband (as *Doubtful* and *Despair* must necessarily be), advised him to beat them without mercy early the following morning.

And this he did; first he abused them as if they were dogs, and then he fell to beating them most fearfully with a grievous twisted wooden club. So tormented were they by his heartless rage, that they could do nothing to help themselves, but only lay moaning with sighs of bitter Lamentation.

When his wife learned that they were yet alive, she further advised him to counsel them to kill themselves. Again, he came to them in a most threatening and despairing way, and beholding their miserable and sore condition, said,

*Despair* “You shall likely never come out of this place alive. The only thing left for you to do is to end your own lives, either with the Knife, by Hanging, or with Poison. For why should you choose Life, since it is attended with so much Bitterness?”

*Hope*. “O, God forbid that we should do such. Please, let us go.”

With that, he looked ugly upon them, and rushed upon them as if to make an end of them himself. He likely would have done so, had he not fallen into one of his fits and lost the use of hand for a time. For he sometimes in Sunshiny weather, fell into fits of paralysis. So it was that he withdrew and left them to consider what they should choose.

*Chr.* “Brother, what shall we do? The life that we now live is miserable! For my part, I do not know whether it is best to live thus, or to end it all as *Despair* has told us. My soul chooses Strangling, and death rather than Life [Job 7:15]. The Grave is more easy for me than this Dungeon! Shall we listen to the Giant?”

*Hope*. “Indeed, our present condition is dreadful, and death would be far more welcome to me than to be like this forever. But let us not forget that our Lord has said, ‘You shall not Murder’ [Ex.20:13]. This applies not only to others, but to ourselves as well.

“You speak of ease in the grave, but have you forgotten Hell to which all Murderers certainly shall go? [I Cor.6:9]. This Giant is not Sovereign as is our Prince. Others have been taken captive by him and yet escaped by the Mercies of our Lord. Who knows, God may have *Despair* to die, or forget to lock us in, or fall again into one of his fits and so we might escape thereby.

“Recall to mind how our Lord delivered you from *Apollyon* and what hardship and terror you endured in the Valley of the Shadow of Death, not to mention how you were not afraid of the Cage or bloody Death itself at Vanity Fair. Why should you fear now? See me, I am in the Dungeon with you suffering the same evils, and I am both weaker in my nature and younger in the Faith than you. Let us exercise Patience as

best we can.”

As he habitually did, *Despair* consulted with *Doubtful* that evening again as what next they should do, seeing that they were, as he said, stubborn rogues. She, therefore, thought to instill terror into the Two by taking them into the courtyard and showing them the Bones and Skulls of those who had been torn into pieces by the Giant in times past. And this he did along with fearful threatening accompanied by fresh wounds inflicted both to and fro.

That night, the Giant marveled that neither by Blows, Counsels, or Threats could he bring them to an end and wondered aloud what might be the cause.

*Doubtful* “I fear that they are holding on to a secret hope that some will come to rescue them or that by some other means, they hope to escape.”

*Despair* “You have well spoken, my Dear. I shall therefore search them thoroughly in the morning.”

Now it happened that about midnight in the Dungeon, the Pilgrims began to Pray, and they continued therein until just before the Dawn. It was then, at the first signs of Light, that *Christian*, as one half amazed, broke out in this passionate speech:

*Chr.* “What a Fool I am to lie in this stinking Dungeon! All this while we may have been free and walking at Liberty had I but remembered the Key! I have a Key in my bosom called Promise, which I am persuaded will open any lock in Doubting Castle.”

*Hope*. “That’s good news, dear brother! Pull it out of your bosom and try it.”

Then the Key was brought out and inserted, which immediately released the Lock, causing the Dungeon door to swing open with ease (for a Key opens nothing unless used). Both Pilgrims made their exit from there and came to the door leading to the Courtyard which equally yielded to the Promise. They hastened from there to the outer Iron Gate of the Compound. This too, though very stiff, gave way to the Key.

Now as this Gate was pushed aside, it groaned with a great creaking which awakened the Giant. Hastily he arose in pursuit of his fleeing prisoners but felt his limbs fail him as one of his fits seized him

once again, and so they escaped from his hands.

With speed and gladness, therefore, they made their way once again to the King's Highway and entered therein at that very point where they had left the Way. For since the time of *Abraham*, none have ever re-entered the Path except at that place where they had left it [Gen.13:3, 4].

## 22

### THE BRETHREN RETURN & DELECTABLE MOUNTAINS

For many long days the Brethren had remained in the City of Refuge awaiting the arrival of news of *Christian*, whom they had imagined still lie bound in Vanity Fair. Now you can well imagine how they did pray night and day most earnestly that the Lord of the Way might be merciful unto him and to them as well. The Wife of the good man was heard to cry almost continually,

*Channa*. "Remember this, that the enemy has reproached, O Lord, and that the foolish people have blasphemed Your name. O deliver not the soul of Your turtledove unto the multitude of the wicked: forget not the congregation of your poor forever. Have respect unto the covenant: for the dark places of the earth are full of the habitations of cruelty" [Ps.74:18-20].

Things became, if possible, more hostile and uproarious in Vanity after the escape of the Brethren and *Christian* and *Hopeful*. Any who were thought to be in sympathy with the Pilgrims were looked upon with great suspicion and many were abused and even tortured to try and force them to confess who had released the Prisoners. So it was, then, for some time that any movements outside the town were closely watched and were undertaken only with threats of peril from the outraged citizens.

It was therefore nearly one week before word reached them in Refuge that *Christian* and one of the members of the Town had escaped and fled past them upon the Way by night. This news brought great relief

to the Company of Disciples who bowed their heads in deep gratitude to Him who had proclaimed Liberty to His captives [Isa.61:1].

They therefore sought to go forth from there with all speed in the hopes of soon meeting up with their beloved Brother and faithful Husband. It so happened by the Providence of God that the very time they received the message of *Christian's* departure was a major Market day in Vanity. Thus everyone was completely absorbed in his main concern in life; gaining Riches by his Trade. Thus they went forth from the nearby City of Refuge without notice of the inhabitants of Vanity and proceeded upon their Way unmolested.

Rapid progress was made, so eager were they to meet up with their separated loved ones. Thus they came to that River of delight with its fair meadows and lush fruit where *Christian* and *Hopeful* were greatly refreshed. Here they met One to whom the young wives were enjoined to commit their babes yet to be born.

This Good Shepherd is full of compassion and knows how to gather the Lambs in His arms and carry them in His bosom [Isa.40:11]. This Man, if any of them go astray or be lost, will bring them again to his fold, bind up the broken, and strengthen the sick [Ezk.34:11-16]. Here they will never lack and will be kept from thieves and robbers, for He will die before any of those entrusted to His care will perish [Jn.10:11]. And so, they were well content to commit their forthcoming children into His care.

Moving from there, for they did not delay long since they were in haste, they entered that rough and stony portion of the Way which was so troublesome to the Two. But they called to mind for their encouragement what they had learned at the Hill of Difficulty, namely, that better is the right Way, though it be ever so hard, than that of Ease, being wrong.

Just as they were feeling the weariness of the Path, they thought they saw Two Travelers resting in the shade before them. They therefore called out to them hoping to discover if they perchance had met *Christian* and his Companion along the Way.

As they drew near, what a Shout arose from one and all as they recognized each other and embraced with Joy. *Christianna* wept glad tears

for the Deliverance of her beloved husband from the Lion's mouth [2 Tim.4:17], and he Blessed the name of the Most High for tender Mercies shown in rescuing them all from so great a death [2 Cor.1:10]. And thus they related with each other all they had met with since the days of Vanity Fair up until the present.

What was of particular cause for thanks to God was the Saving Power of Christ who had Rescued them all in such marvelous ways: of *Faithful* being ushered into the Heavenly City as he was, of their own Deliverance from the Fair, the Saving of *Hopeful's* soul from the Vanity of this World, their Protection in the City of Refuge, and their Escape from Giant *Despair*. Truly He saves to the uttermost.

This last testimony caused them to consider what might be done to protect fellow Travelers from his ravages. After some discussion it was proposed that they return to Doubting Castle and see what damage they might inflict upon him and his Fortress.

Now some objected that it was not lawful to tread upon Forbidden ground though the end of so doing might be good. This put them into somewhat of a debate until *Great-Heart* concluded the matter.

*Great* "It is true that none is ever justified in leaving the Way for his own Ease and in Unbelief. That is very clear and must not be done as our dear Brethren have so painfully learned.

"However, if in obedience to the Directives of the King Himself, one takes up the Sword of the Spirit in order to destroy Doubt and Despair, this is not only lawful, but is praiseworthy. Our Lord Himself entered the Robber's Den, not to gain profit thereby, but to cleanse it of its defilement and stumbling to others. And this He did for the Zeal which He had for His Father's House [Jn.2:14-17] and for no other reason.

"Thus He did not leave the Way in the slightest, though He was found in the midst of Corruption itself. It did not stick to Him, as it had no place in his heart. I dare say, that our Two Brethren will return with us across By-Pass Meadow and into the Castle itself, for motives completely unlike the ones that prompted them at the first: This time, in Faith, Obedience, and Victory rather than in Unbelief, Disobedience, and Despair."

And so it was settled that the men would make the assault while the women stayed in the Way under the Guard and protection of Mr. *Feeble-Mind* and Mr. *Ready-to-Halt*. For in this very spot along the King's Highway, if one kept to the Way, even a little child might lead them [Isa.11:6].

This small army thus set out led by *Great-Heart* and Old Mr. *Honest*, followed by *Hopeful* along with *Christian* and his four Sons, all of whom had gained skill in wielding the Sword [I Jn.2:13, 14]. When they came up to the Castle-Gate, they knocked boldly for entrance with unusual noise.

*Despair* "Who and what is he that is so foolishly rash as to make demands from Giant *Despair*?"

*Honest* "We are Pilgrims upon our King's business who have come to remove your head and demolish Doubting Castle around your corpse."

*Despair* "Ha! Pilgrims? Have I not made a conquest of Angels? Who then are you to frighten me? I shall feed your flesh to the dogs." And, with that, he rushed upon them with a helmet of steel upon his head, a breast-piece of fire girded to him, and shoes of iron with a great and mighty club in his hand.

But they encountered him with a brave assault with this as their Battle-Cry, "Through God we shall do valiantly: For He it is that shall tread down our Enemies" [Ps.60:12]. And so they fell to blows and the struggle was fierce indeed, and all the more so when the Giant discovered that his former Prisoners were now his assailants.

*Doubtful*, the Giantess, joined in the desperate conflict and resisted and hacked away, shrieking in rage until she fell to rise no more under the Sword of Old *Honest*. The rest fought for their lives, for the Giant himself stiffly retaliated with unheard of strength and fury. Eventually they prevailed upon him and brought him to the ground, though he was very loath to die. He struggled hard until the last when, together, they had off his head.

Immediately they proceeded to demolishing his Castle, and that with ease for both the Giant and his wife were no more. Even so, they were seven days in pulling it down, so formidable is Doubt and Despair

and so strong the bars of their Castle. A great pile of stones was heaped upon the two Enemies of the Prince of Pilgrims from the rubble of their dwelling.

While they moved from one place to the other, they discovered in one cellar two Prisoners, Mr. *Despondency* and his daughter, *Much-Afraid*, nearly starved to death. These they rescued and brought out into the Light of Day. But it would have made you wonder to have seen all the bodies laying here and there with the great heap of dead men's bones in the Dungeon.

When their exploit was completed, they took the two former prisoners into their care since they were Pilgrims, though kept in his Castle. When they returned to their Companions, they burst into joyous acclaim at seeing the Giant's head. Some of the women, therefore, played upon their instruments since they were so merrily disposed. Even Mr. *Ready-to-Halt* danced with his one crutch along with *Much-Afraid*. Her father, however, was more for eating than for dancing, so *Christianna* gave him some of her bottle of Tonic which revived him while she prepared something for him to eat.

And they thus were comforted and greatly relieved by the successful venture upon this most stalwart Enemy of those in the Way. They set the Giant's head upon a pole alongside the Highway as a warning to any who may be tempted to enter into his grounds, having this inscription:

*Though Doubting Castle be demolished,  
And the Giant Despair has lost his head,  
SIN can rebuild the Castle, make it remain,  
And arouse Despair the Giant to live again.*

After refreshing themselves awhile and hearing the story of the two recently rescued, they proceeded upon their Journey. By and by they came unto a hill country abounding in Gardens, Orchards, and Fountains of water known as the Delectable Mountains. At the ascent were Shepherds assigned to the place by the Lord of the Heights to feed His Lambs with Knowledge and Understanding [Jer.3:15].

When the Shepherds had learned from where they had come and the intent of their Journey, they looked very lovingly upon them, welcoming them, saying, "Come, blessed of the Lord, you are welcome to us for we have a charge from our Lord to entertain strangers and tend His Lambs, be they feeble or strong, even the least of whom is our joy to serve" [Heb.13:1,2; Jn.21:15-17; I Thess.5:14].

They brought them graciously forward to partake of a feast of the finest that Emmanuel's Land had to offer, with especial care given to the less robust among them. This made *Great-Heart* remark, "By this I know that you are my Lord's Shepherds indeed; for you have not pushed aside these weak ones, but rather have done unto them as you would to Christ" [Ezek..34:21].

After they had partaken to their satisfaction, they each went to rest, for the day had already declined and they were wearied from their Journey. In the morning, seeing that it was clear and bright, the Shepherds thought it would be profitable to show them certain rare sights which can only be viewed from their Mountains.

So they had them pleasantly by the sweetness of the Orchards and through the flowered Meadows leading to the foothills of Insight before them.

*Mountains Delectable they now ascend,  
Where Shepherds be, which to them commend  
Things both Alluring and those Cautions to hear:  
Pilgrims are kept steady by Faith and Fear.*

First they were taken to Mt. Marvel where, some distance away, was a man who tumbled the hills about with Words. And truly it was marvelous to behold how, by the Word of the King, the mountains themselves could not stand before the Faith of this son of Grace [Zech.4:6, 7; Mt.17:20].

Next they ascended to the Top of a hill called Error which dropped off suddenly as a sheer Cliff on the farthest side. *Watchful*, one of the Shepherds, bid them to carefully gaze over the edge where they saw several men all dashed to pieces at the bottom. The Pilgrims shuddered at the sight and the Women did gasp and cry out. "Beware," said he, "of

drawing near to this Place as did these who listened to *Hymenaeus* and *Philetus* and were thus destroyed by such misguided Faith" [2 Tim.2:17, 18; I Tim.1:19, 20].

Innocent Mount was nearby where they beheld a man clothed all in white; and two men, *Prejudice* and *Ill-will*, continually casting dirt upon him. What was wonderful to observe was that, no matter whatsoever manner of Dirt they might throw, it simply fell off after only a short while so that his Garment remained ever so spotless. Then did *Sincere* open the meaning to them. "This is one, *Godly Man*, whose blameless life cannot be polluted by the slander of those who hate his well-doing. Thus will God vindicate His innocent ones and bring forth their righteousness as the Light and their judgment as the noonday" [Ps.37:6].

From there they were led to another Peak named Caution from where afar off they could see certain men blindly stumbling about among the Tombs. When the Company looked with amazement desiring an explanation, *Knowledge* unfolded its meaning. "These are those who left the Way at the parting of the fence opposite By-Pass Meadow where the going is tiresome to Travelers. They were taken captive by Giant *Despair* and thrown into his Dungeon where he put out their eyes and have been left to wander among the Tombs unto this very day. And so you see, the saying of the Wise Man has its fulfillment, 'A man who wanders out of the way of Understanding, shall remain in the Congregation of the Dead'" [Prov.21:16].

Then did *Christian* and *Hopeful* tremble greatly with tears gushing out and related to the Shepherds their experiences there and how the Brethren made an end of the Giant and his Doubting fortress. To this the Shepherds nodded knowingly and *Experience* spoke what the Two had come to realize, "It is of the Lord's mercies that we are not consumed, because His compassions fail not" [Lam.3:22].

Since there was yet more for their profit, they then moved on to the Mountain of Charity where a most pleasing sight greeted them, especially was it so to *Mercy* who was of this temperament. There they saw a man with a bundle of cloth before him out of which he cut coats and garments for the Poor who continually stood about him. Now what was wonderful to behold was that, no matter how much he would cut and give

to the Needy, his roll of cloth was never any the less. It was *Sincere* who unfolded the meaning to them, "This man who loves the Poor and gives unto them shall never lack, and the Lord repays and replenishes him, for the poor are Dear to the heart of our God" [Prov.28:27; 19:17].

Just alongside this Mount is the Hill of Folly where they watched the fruitless efforts of *Fool* and *Lack-wit* who repeatedly washed an Ethiopian in the attempts to remove the color of his skin. But the more they applied their soaps, the darker he appeared. "A lesson indeed is here," explained *Experience*, "As impossible as it is to change this man's skin, so can a heart of sin not be remedied by applying external solutions [Jer.13:23; 2:22]. Rather, his condition worsens and renders him that much more abominable as the Pharisees became."

Now in the side of this Mountain was found a door which the Shepherds bid them to peer into, which, when they did, they discovered it to be very dark and smoky. Also, they heard a rumbling as of Fire, the crying of Torment, and smelled the scent of brimstone and sulfur, and the very ground beneath them did groan and quake.

"This," said *Watchful*, "is the By-Way to Hell by which Hypocrites go in although they have a show of going on Pilgrimage. It is here that many have perished such as *Esau* who sold his Birthright for the sake of his Belly [Heb.12:16, 17; Phil.3:18, 19]; or like *Judas* who sell their Master; or of such as blaspheme the Gospel as *Alexander* [2 Tim.4:14, 15]; and those that hypocritically lie as did *Ananias* along with his wife, *Sapphira*" [Acts 5:1-4].

At last, before they set out upon their Way again, the Shepherds brought them up unto the Hill called Clear from where one could see even the Gate of the Heavenly City through the Telescope provided to them. Now some saw the place Brighter than others according to their measure of Faith and Steadiness of hand as they gazed. Yet all perceived, to one degree or another, the Glory of the Place to which they longed to be, and this made them all the more anxious to be on their Way again and caused them to sing:

*Thus by the Shepherds Secrets are revealed,  
Which from all others are kept concealed:*

*Come to the Shepherds then, if you would see  
Things deep, Things hid, and that Mysterious be.*

When therefore they were about to depart, *Knowledge* gave them a Map of the Way and *Watchful* warned them to Beware of the Flatterer. It was *Experience* who cautioned them against Sleeping on the Enchanted Ground and *Sincere* smiled upon them, wishing them God's speed. And so it was that they passed from there wiser and more eager to finally behold the face of their Prince.

# 23

## IGNORANCE, TURN-AWAY, & LITTLE-FAITH

The Company moved along comfortably for some distance, blessed in their Fellowship with one another and recalling the lessons gained for their eternal advantage along the Way. Presently they came upon a Crooked little lane that came into the Highway which descended from the land of Conceit (for it was a high place).

There came forth from there a very brisk lad out of that country whose name was *Ignorance* and presumed to join up with the Pilgrims. They inquired of him from where he came and to where he hoped to go, to which he replied with assurance that he was headed to the Heavenly City.

*Hon.* “But how do you think to get in at the Gate of the City?”

*Ignor.* “I imagine the same way other good people do.”

*Hope.* “But what do you have to show at that Gate so you will be admitted there?”

*Ignor.* “Why, I know my Lord’s Will and have lived a good life; I am not in debt to any man, and I Pray, Fast, pay my Tithes, and have even left my country for this Journey. I suppose this is enough for any man to enter there.”

*Great.* “But you did not come in at the Narrow Gate that is at the Head of this Way. You got here through this Crooked lane and therefore, I fear, at the last, you will be shown to be a Thief and a Robber, and shall never reach that Place which you ignorantly imagine will be

yours.”

*Ignor.* “Gentlemen, you are utter Strangers to me. Be content to follow your own Religion, and I will follow that of my own country. I hope that all will be well eventually since I, like you, are in the Way, regardless how I arrived therein. Besides, that Narrow Gate you speak of is far off from our region and, now that I think about it, no man from Conceit even knows the way to reach it.”

*Christian*, therefore, when he heard these things, said to the Brethren, “Do you see a man who is wise in his own Conceit? There is more hope for a Fool than for him [Prov.26:12]. And, as you can see, his wisdom fails him and he shows to all that he is nothing more than a Fool [Eccl.10:3]. Let us therefore leave him for the present, perhaps he will reflect upon what he has heard, though there is little hope that he will.”

This they did and *Hopeful* took up this note:

*Let Ignorance a little while now muse  
On what is said, and let him not refuse  
Good Counsel to embrace, lest he remain  
Still Ignorant of what’s the highest Gain.*

*God says, Those who be not Understanding’s slave,  
Think what they may, them He will not save.*

Presently they entered a very dark lane, where they met a man whom seven devils had bound with seven strong cords [Prov.5:22; Mt.12:45] and were dragging back to the Door in the side of the Hill, being that By-Way to Hell. Now the sight of this did make the Women tremble at this fearful spectacle and the still more terrible prospect awaiting him. As he passed by, *Matthew* noticed on his back a paper written with this bold inscription, “Wanton Professor,” and, “Damnable Heretic.”

*Great.* “It is who I suspected, one, *Turn-Away*, from the town of Apostasy. This man would hearken to no Counsel, but once he began to Turn Away, no persuasion could stop him [Heb.10:26-29].

“Even when he came to the Cross and the Tomb, he gnashed

with his teeth and stamped his feet and said he was determined to return to his Apostasy. Not even when the good *Evangelist* offered to lay hands upon him and turn him again into the Way would he yield. Rather, he resisted stoutly and railed upon him, climbing over the Wall into Beelzebub's domain."

Now the sight of this man caused them all to soberly reflect upon the consequence of failing to heed the Voice of Him that calls Today, lest there should be among any one of them an unbelieving heart in falling away from the Living God [Heb.3:12]. It also brought to mind the story which *Christian* had heard of a fellow Pilgrim who had met with Trouble near this place.

*Chr.* "I remember what I learned of a good man from the town of Sincere whose name was *Little-Faith*. It so happened that at this junction ahead is that road known as Dead-Man's-Lane which comes down from Broad-Way-Gate. It is so called because of the frequent murders and robberies which occur there.

"Well, this Traveler had chanced to sleep near the spot not realizing his danger when three Rogues known as *Faint-Heart*, *Mistrust*, and *Guilt* speedily fell upon him. With threats of force they made him to stand and demanded his money. Now the poor man's knees became as weak as water and he had no power to either fight or flee.

"Since he hesitated to give up his money, *Mistrust* rushed up to him and seized his bag of silver at which *Little-Faith* cried out, "Thieves! Thieves!" With that, *Guilt* promptly dashed him upon the head with a mighty club which brought him to the ground where he lay bleeding most pitifully. The Thieves, hearing the approach of one whom they feared might be *Great-Grace* from the city of Good-Confidence, escaped into the darkness of the surrounding forest."

*Hope.* "It makes one's heart ache for the poor Brother. But did they take away everything that he possessed?"

*Chr.* "No, they did not discover or take from him his Jewels which he had with him until his Journey's end, though he proceeded with many a hunger and pain by reason of losing most of his money [I Pet.4:18]. Nor did they collect his Certificate by which he was to be admitted at the Heavenly Gate. But this, I learned, was more due to the

good Providence of God than by his Endeavor [2 Tim.1:14; 2 Pet.2:9]. It was also reported that for the rest of his Journey, he could talk of little else than his loss and grief encountered here. He never quite recovered from all that he suffered.

"Yet in all this, he would never sell his Jewels. These were more precious to him than to even think of trading them to amend all the afflictions and fears he was beset with. He was no *Esau* who sold his own for the sake of his own Belly. A dove cannot be persuaded to feed upon the flesh of beasts, though a vulture would rush at the chance. So *Esau* and those like him will gladly give whatsoever they have to secure fleshly lusts and worldly comfort. But he that has saving Faith, be it ever so little, can never do so."

*Jos.* "Why, I think that these three fellows are nothing but Cowards. Why else would they run at the very sound of one approaching? For myself, I will say that he should have plucked up a greater heart and resisted them."

*Chr.* "You speak in the bravery of your Youth because you have prevailed against the Giant in Company with those who've fought the Lord's Battles. *Peter* spoke bold words in the presence of Christ with the Apostles by his side, but in the time of Trial when alone, a little girl did make him fall back under the influence of these three Rogues" [Mt.26:35, 69, 70].

*Jos.* "But, father, did they not run away when they thought that *Great-Grace* was coming upon them?"

*Chr.* "True, they have often fled, both they and their Master, when *Great-Grace* has but appeared. But, he is one of the King's Champions and there is quite a difference between him and *Little-Faith*. Not all of the King's subjects are His Champions, nor can all do such feats of War as he. Is it possible to imagine a little child handling *Goliath* as *David* did?"

"The strength of an ox will not be found in a bird in the hand. Some are strong, some are weak; some have great Faith, some have little. This Pilgrim was of the weaker sort whom we are bidden to bear their infirmities, and not to please ourselves [Rom.14:1]. God forbids us to think more highly of ourselves than we ought, for all we have is received

from above” [Rom.12:3].

*Hon.* “This you have truly stated, dear Brother. For even *Great-Grace* himself, though excellent with his weapons, cannot but be thrown down by *Faint-Heart*, *Mistrust*, and *Guilt* if they get within him. If you will look well upon his face, you can see the signs of cuts and scars to demonstrate what I say. I have even heard him to say when in the midst of this combat, ‘We despaired even of life’ [2 Cor.1:8].

“How these sturdy Rogues made *David* groan, moan, and roar! And besides all of this, their King, *Leviathan*, is at their beck and call. And once he has been aroused, will not any man be laid low at even the sight of him? [Job 41:9]. I tell you, there is none so fierce that dares to stir him up [Job.41:10].

“The sword that reaches him cannot avail, the arrow cannot make him flee, and he laughs at the shaking of the spear [Job 41:26, 28, 29]. Upon earth there is no one like him, who is made without fear. He is king over all the sons of pride [Job 41:33, 34]. In this conflict, carnal weapons and self-confidence are worse than useless but will actually give these three and *Leviathan*, their King, the advantage over a man. Only those weapons which are Mighty through God can avail, and that with difficulty” [2 Cor.10:3-5].

*Great.* “Well said, my Brethren. In fact, he that had Skill has said, ‘Above all, take up the Shield of Faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the fiery Darts of the Wicked one’ [Eph.6:16]. It was this Shield of Faith that our robbed brother had little grasp of.

“It is also good that we desire to venture not even one Step unless the Lord go with us. It was this moving in Step with our Living Prince that made *David* fear no evil in the very Valley of the Shadow of Death [Ps.23:4]. It is what made *Moses* rather die on the spot than move one centimeter without the Lord’s Presence [Ex.33:15].

“O, my Brethren, if our God will but go with us, what need is there to fear though ten thousands set themselves against us? [Ps.3; 27:1-3]. But woe to that man who meets such Thieves without the Lord at His side and without the Shield in his hand.”

Then I saw that three among their Company, namely, *Ready-to-Halt*, *Feeblemind*, and *Despondency* were gladdened and encouraged by this

discussion; for they perceived that one like themselves did actually arrive safely at the Gate to the City and was admitted there.

*Hope.* “I shall be glad if we ourselves meet with no such dangers, though I suspect that we are not past all yet. However, since the Lion and the Bear have not yet devoured us, let us Hope that God will also Deliver us from the next uncircumcised Philistine across our Path” [I Sam.17:37].

And so, in remembrance of *Little-Faith* this song was sung:

Poor Little-Faith! *Have you been among Thieves?  
Was robbed? Remember this; Who so believes,  
And gets more Faith, shall then a Victor be  
Over ten thousand; else scarce over Three.*

# 24

## VALIANT-FOR-TRUTH, FLATTERER, & ATHEIST

Now it was as they had paused for rest in the shade near this very Lane discussing *Little-Faith*, that one came up to them, bloodied and with Sword drawn in his hand. Upon seeing him, the men jumped to their feet and drew their Swords as *Great-Heart* challenged him, “Are you for us or for our Adversaries?” [Josh. 5:13].

“My name is *Valiant-for-Truth* and I am a Pilgrim on my way to the Heavenly City when I met with three Thugs who advised me to join with them, turn back to my Town, or die there on the spot. And, as you can see, I have resisted unto blood in my striving against sin” [Heb.12:4].

Upon hearing this, *Christianna* quickly implored *Mercy*, *Phoebe*, and *Grace* to dress his wounds while she and *Martha* hastened to prepare something nourishing to refresh him.

*Hon.* “Well, my brother, we bless the Lord indeed for His delivering *Mercy* to you. But how did you reply their evil intent to have you join with them?”

*Valiant* “To that I replied that I never could join with the likes of them, for I had been a True man for a long while [Prov.1:10-16]. And as for going back, that has never entered my heart, for I desire a better country, even a Heavenly one [Heb.11:14-16]. At the last I told them that I am at the command of my King and would rather die in His service than listen to them for an instant. And with that, we fell to blows for upwards of three hours, and I dare say, I got the best of them though receiving my

own wounds as you can see.”

*Great.* “But here are great odds, three against one!”

*Valiant* “’Tis true; but little and more are nothing to him that has Truth on his side: ‘Though a host should encamp against me,’ said one, ‘my heart shall not fear: Though War should rise against me, in this will I be confident’ [Ps.27:3]. Besides, I have read in some Records that one man has fought an army [2 Sam.23:11, 12]. And how many did *Samson* slay with the jaw-bone of a donkey?” [Jud.15:15].

*Chr.* “But did you not cry out for someone to come to your aid?”

*Valiant* “I did to my King, who I knew could hear, and He sent me invisible Help, and that was sufficient for me [2 Cor.12:9]. Why, let a man have one of these Swords with skill to use it, and he can venture upon an Angel with it. Its edges will never blunt and it will cut flesh and bones, soul and spirit, and all” [Heb.4:12].

*Hope.* “Ah, but you fought for a great while, I wonder that you were not weary.”

*Valiant* “I indeed fought until my Sword did cleave to my hand, and the Lord gave a great victory this day” [2 Sam.23:10].

And so he was welcomed by all into their Company as a true traveling Companion. By this time his wounds had been treated and the sisters had provided good things for his comfort which were brought forth by *Grace*. While he ate they heard his story.

*Valiant* “I dwelt in the Country of Dark-Land, not far from the City of Destruction. A Mr. *Tell-True* came into our parts and told us how a certain *Christian* had left his doomed Place in order to go on Pilgrimage and how his Wife and Children followed him as well. Well, when I heard this Testimony, it kindled within me a desire for the things Above which moved me to forsake all in order to walk in this Way.”

When they heard this, they all smiled to themselves and *Christian* and his Family did blush from embarrassment. It was then that old Mr. *Honest* said, “My dear brother, that very *Christian* and his Family are right here before you.” Now you can imagine the astonishment on his face when he heard this.

*Valiant* “Is it so? How I have often thanked my God for this good man and his Family. My dear brother, *Christian*, and dearest sister,

*Christianna*, I shall ever be grateful to God throughout all eternity for the Grace of God upon your lives which so affected my own [2 Cor.1:14]. Ah, my heart is full of joy today! Bless you, my brother, and bless you, my sister, and bless these your children.”

*Great*. “For all this and many more we praise the name of the Blessed One. How good of Him to allow us to meet you thus. Truly His ways are wonderful and past finding out [Rom.11:33]. But, do tell us more about your coming on Pilgrimage. Did no one oppose you?”

*Valiant* “No one? Ah, nearly one and all. In fact, the whole world hated me for I was no longer of it [Jn.17:14]. Some tried to bring me back by speaking of the frightening and dangerous things I’d likely meet on the Way. Why they listed off one thing after another: *Beelzebub’s* Archers, Lions, Giants, Devils, Snares, Pits, and many more besides.

“Next they warned me of the multitude of Deceivers that I would come by. They told me of false men lying in wait to delude me, namely, *Worldly Wiseman*, *Formalist* and *Hypocrisy* would beguile me along the Way. If they did not descend upon me, then surely *Talkative*, *By-Means*, or *Demas* would; not to mention *Ignorance* who would mix up my head and so ruin me.

“They further would have stumbled me by citing examples of good men (as they called them) who set out on this foolish Journey but realized what a useless endeavor it was and so came back to their senses. And they named such as *Obstinate* and *Pliable*, *Mistrust* and *Timorous*, *Turn-Away* and several more who set out and then fell back.”

*Great* “And did none of these things move you to discouragement?”

*Valiant* “No, they seemed as so many Nothings to me” [Acts 20:22-24].

*Feeble*. “If I may be so bold to ask, Sir, how did that come about?”

*Valiant* “Why, I believed what Mr. *True-Tell* had said, and that carried me beyond them all.”

*Hon*. “Then this was your Victory, even your Faith” [I Jn.5:4].

*Valiant* “This, and this alone, is the Victory over the World; and by Faith I have come thus far so that I have learned to sing:

*Who would true Valor see,  
Let him come hither;  
One here will constant be,  
Come wind, come weather:  
There’s no Discouragement  
Shall make him once relent,  
His first avowed intent  
To be a Pilgrim.*

*Who so beset him round  
With dismal stories,  
Do but themselves confound,  
His Strength the more is.*

*No Lion can him fright;  
He’ll with a Giant fight,  
But he will have a right  
To be a Pilgrim.*

*Demon, nor foul Fiend  
Can daunt his spirit;  
He knows, he at the End  
Shall Life inherit.*

*Then Fancies fly away,  
He’ll fear not what men say,  
He’ll labor Night and Day  
To be a Pilgrim.*

Now this Brave man had sufficiently recovered by the mercies of God and through the kindness of the Brethren, and thus they renewed their Journey together. They had not gone far before they reached a spot where a way joined their own which appeared to Sight as straight as the Way they should go. Here they paused and considered which of the two

they ought to travel.

They had only just begun to discuss this when *Matthew* spoke up, “Did not *Knowledge*, the Shepherd, give us a Map so we would not miss our Way?” This they acknowledged with grateful remembrance and pulled it out which quickly lightened their Path [Ps.119:105].

As they were just passing the junction of this look-alike Lane, they saw one coming towards them, as if sorrowing over some misdeed. When he drew near they called to him to know how it fared with him and what he had met with in the Lane. Now the man, at first, seemed afraid at such a large Company until he recognized their Garments, Armor, and Swords. He then, relaxing a bit, introduced himself as a Pilgrim, by name, *Forgetful*.

*Great*. “How is it, my man, that you are coming from this Lane yonder?”

*Forget*. “To my shame, I must admit that I thought that this was the Way to the Heavenly City and so followed it.”

*Hon*. “Why, didn’t you receive a Map from the Shepherds?”

*Forget*. “This is the cause of my shame. For I indeed did, but I did not think to look at it when I came to this place.”

*Valiant* “I perceive, then, that you began to walk by Sight rather than Faith when you reached this spot.”

*Forget*. “Exactly. I was unsure which Way to take when I met a man dressed all in White who offered to conduct me personally in the Way since, as he said, he was travelling to the Heavenly City himself.

“All seemed well for a time, and I thought I was heading in the right direction. But, slowly and by degrees (though I could not perceive it at the time), he so turned me around that I was actually proceeding in the opposite direction!

“Still I kept company with him until, suddenly, he led me into the entanglement of a Net out of which I could not escape no matter how I struggled. It was when I was helplessly caught that his White cloak slipped off of him and I saw him for what he really was: A Flatterer.”

*Chr*. “As is the saying of the Wise man, so you discovered it to be; ‘A man who Flatters his neighbor is spreading a Net for his feet’“ [Prov.29:5].

*Forget*. “’Tis true, brother. As I lay there, I kept reproaching myself that I did not consult the Directives provided by our Prince. His Word continuously came to my mind, and made me all the more miserable, namely, ‘Concerning the works of men, by the Word of your Lips, I have kept me from the paths of the Destroyer’ [Ps.17:4]. This was the very thing I did not do.”

*Hope*. “How then did you manage at last to escape?”

*Forget*. “It happened unto me according to the true Word of our King, ‘Grievous punishment is for him who forsakes the Way’ [Prov.15:10]. A Shining One came to me with a Whip of cords in His hand and asked me how I came into this condition.

“With shame I told him how it happened, and He reminded me of all that He had done and said to prevent me from coming to this place, asking me why I had done so. I could only answer, and that weakly, ‘I Forgot.’

“He then simply tore the Net as if it were a thread and bid me to lie down to receive my beating [Deut.25:2; 2 Chron.6:26, 27]. As He did so, He said, ‘As many as I love, I rebuke and discipline; therefore be zealous and repent’ [Rev.3:19].

“It has truly done my soul good, though. At the moment it seemed grievous, but it has since yielded the peaceful fruit of righteousness [Heb.12:11]. As I was coming back to the Way, I was softly singing this song to myself:

*Come here, you that walk along the Way,  
See how the Pilgrims fare, that go astray:  
They are caught in an entangling Net,  
Because good Counsel they lightly did Forget:  
’Tis true, they rescued were, but yet you see  
They’re sorely scourged: Let this your Caution be.*

*Valiant* “By this we know that you are our true brother and loved by our God. For He surely scourges every son whom He receives [Heb.12:6]. Welcome then, Friend *Forgetful*, let us be of profit to each other as we Journey together on this Highway of Holiness” [Isa.35:8].

And having said thus, they continued on together discoursing upon the things Above and lovingly helping each other along the Way. Their Progress was pleasant for sometime and they advanced a good distance towards their Goal when they saw ahead a man coming towards them with his back to Zion.

*Forget.* “Let us Beware, Brethren, this may be another Flatterer!”

When the man drew near he inquired where such a large Company could be going as they were upon this Road.

*Hon.* “We are all Pilgrims proceeding with oneness of mind to Mount Zion” [Eph.4:4].

Then the man, whose name was *Atheist*, burst into a great laughter and mocked them, saying, “What manner of ignorant and simple-minded dreamers have I met with! Ha! The place to which you are going does not exist and your Way is a delusion!” And with that, he fell into laughing again.

*Great.* “I can see clearly that you are an *Atheist*. The Word of God speaks against your false and arrogant presumption.”

*Atheist* “Ha! Word of God indeed! All things are Relative, there are no Absolutes! Every intelligent man knows this.”

*Valiant* “Herein do you show your folly. If what you say is true, that there are no Absolutes, then this very statement of yours is false, for it is surely an absolute statement. Thus, by your own confession, Absolute truth exists. You are greatly mistaken. God’s Word is Absolute Truth.”

*Atheist* “Bah! That is just your own opinion. It may be true to you but its not true to me. All truth is a matter of one’s own Perspective anyway.”

*Valiant* “Again you show to all men that you are a Fool. For if all truth is a matter of one’s own perspective, then even this statement of yours is in that category which necessarily makes it false. Thus it is proved once again by simple Reason, that your claims are in error and without basis.”

*Atheist* “One thing I can surely see is that you are a very stubborn fanatic about things you have never Seen. As for me, I’ve been looking for over twenty years now and I’ve never Seen any such Mount Zion, nor

have I ever Seen this God whom you so confidently talk about.”

*Valiant* “Nor is it likely that you ever will, and that for several reasons. First, the things that you have not seen cannot be seen by the natural man who walks by Sight and not by Faith [I Cor.2:9, 14; 2 Cor.5:7].

“Secondly, your twenty years of toil have been according your own understanding which necessarily exposes your folly of not being able to reach the City [Eccl.10:15].

“Thirdly, you say you have not Seen God or the City and therefore do not believe they exist. Neither have you Seen your own mind; does it not exist then? Neither have you Seen the wind; does it not exist then? But even a Fool believes in the Wind for he can both feel its operation and know its existence by its influences around him” [Jn.3:8].

*Atheist* “ You are certainly one of the most troublesome sort of Pests in all the World; believing Fables and worse. There is no God, and this I know without a doubt!”

*Valiant* “See how certain you are of what you do not know. How much of all that is able to be known do you actually know; is it up to 5%? Does this not show that you are abysmally ignorant of the remaining 95%? Nearly everything possible to be known you are ignorant of, yet you say you know that there is no God.

“Truly the Word of God is fulfilled in your case, ‘The Fool has said in his heart, “There is no God”‘ [Ps.14:1]. As for us, we will obey the command of our King and leave the presence of a Fool when we do not discern in him the words of knowledge [Prov.14:7].

“We thus leave you to yourself to walk in your self-chosen darkness [I Jn.2:11] while we who have believed and known the Truth will continue in our Way” [I Jn.2:21].

So *Atheist*, with a final scornful snort of contempt, angrily went his way back to the City of Destruction, yet he laughed no more as he went.

# 25

## DARWIN THE GIANT & THE ENCHANTED GROUND

Not far from where they left *Atheist*, they entered a dense and overgrown Jungle where strange and mixed animal noises filtered through the green. A thick canopy of hardwood trees overshadowed their Path, casting gloom and obscurity upon their course.

Continual dripping from the tangled foliage made the Way slippery, and forced the Company to move slowly in their upward Progress as they began to ascend unto a higher level. The chattering of Monkeys filled their ears incessantly, making it difficult to concentrate on their steps due to their distracting clamor.

*Channa*. “O, is there nothing to listen to in this place other than the shouting of Monkeys?”

Just then a fearsome crashing of brush was heard to their left as if some monstrous and wild beast were rushing upon them. Swords were drawn as the crackling of branches continued and grew frighteningly near to where they stood, and the women trembled. With a shout of warning, while leaping backwards none too soon, *Great-Heart* barely escaped a sapling falling across their Way.

And then, emerging from the thicket and straddling their Path, stood the fearsome Giant *Darwin*.

*Darwin* “This is my Realm and you, I can see, are Trespassers. Prepare to meet my demands, or proceed no further.”

*Great*. “The only demands we obey are those of the Most High, the Creator of the ends of the earth.”

*Darwin* “Creator? I defy your creator, his myths, and all his useless followers. I am the Creator in this Jungle and my creation rules

over all. I will show you whom I have made, whom to fear, and whom you must serve.”

Then from the swamps came a hissing slithering sound mingled with rasping groans and belching roars. Out of the slime emerged, first crawling, then walking, a hideous Beast; seemingly a composite of all animals both imaginable and unimaginable. It was at once covered with scales and then feathers, fur and also skin, and over its vital parts were plates of armor like that of tortoise shell.

Arising to its full height, it towered over the Pilgrims, twitching its fork-like tail while clicking fearsome fangs and swinging massive deadly claws in sweeping motions at the Brethren. It resembled *Apollyon* in many ways and some say that he himself gave birth to this Monster.

*Darwin* “This, is my creation. Behold *Evolution* and bow and tremble. None shall reach the Heavenly City without doing homage to *Darwin* and my Beast.”

*Valiant* “O Giant, we do not need to give you an answer in this matter. Our God whom we serve is able to Deliver us from your hand and from this, your wretched Invention. So let it be known unto you, therefore, that none of us will acknowledge or bow to your Lying Wonder” [Dan.3:16-18].

With that, the Giant trembled with Fury that he and his Beast should be so lightly esteemed, so that the Jungles echoed with his deafening thunder, “Prepare to meet your end in this our Earth where the Fittest Survive!”

And saying this, he called upon the Monkeys to cast sticks upon their heads from the treetops while loosening the vines to entangle their feet. This they did with ear-piercing screeching from all sides and doing much abuse.

Now all this while the Giant and the Beast, *Evolution*, were not idle. Nature itself seemed to be under their sway and joined in the assault against the Pilgrims. Fiery hail began to fall thick and heavy which could only be extinguished by their Shields [Eph.6:16].

Now the Brethren behaved themselves most bravely, some flying vigorously against the Giant and his Beast while the remainder warded off the pelting missiles of the Monkeys to protect the Women and the

Weaker among them.

This fierce conflict raged for hours on end, into the heat of the day. Never had they encountered such opposition from their Enemies. And what was most curious of all was that, whenever a blow was landed from their Swords, it appeared that they soon recovered as if nothing had wounded them.

Seeing this to be so, they agreed upon a united direct assault, to make them feel the power of their Weapons together at once. This did indeed make them draw back and cause them to even offer terms of peace to the Church.

*Darwin* “We are willing to acknowledge your idea of a Creator if you will agree that He has used *Evolution* as His means of Creation. That is, you can say that God was involved at the Beginning, but that He then turned over the development and completion of it to my Assistant. Agree to this, and you may pass unharmed.”

*Chr.* “Away with your compromising Blasphemy! We would never consider for a moment associating the Glory of the one and only Creator with the wickedness of your invented Beast. Now step aside or feel the metal of our resistance!”

*Darwin* “So, you wish to become an Endangered Species, about to become Extinct, do you? *Evolution!* Persuade them of your might and prove who is Fittest to Survive!”

O it would have made you shudder to have heard the bellows of the Giant, the roaring of the Beast, and the screeching rage of the Monkeys as they hurled themselves against the Saints. Now the Pilgrims had gained experience from their previous assault and so had determined to charge them with full force as if they were one man.

*Christianna* and the Sisters raised their Petitions before the King while the Brothers lunged and slashed at the Giant and his Beast relentlessly. This had its effect and the Beast himself suffered many a wound which eventually forced him to flee into the Jungles.

Now the Giant, when he saw that the Monster withdrew and that all Swords were now against him alone, considered what he had best do. In an instant, he uprooted a small tree and swung it at the advancing Company. When they fell to the earth to avoid being crushed, he leaped

twenty-five feet at a lunge (for he was a Giant) and so escaped into the forest.

It was then that they were able to pass safely through his Domain, though the Monkeys did continually besiege them until completely out of that Jungle land. They proceeded as best they could due to the fatigue of the Battle and weariness of mind from the uninterrupted shouting of *Darwin's* Monkeys.

It so happened that when the noise of their chatter could be heard no more, they came upon a pleasant Arbor placed there by the Prince for the refreshment of His Pilgrims. Now the name of that place was Rest and there they reclined in His shade with great delight [S.of S. 2:3] and partook of the fruit that flourished throughout the year there, even in times of Drought [Jer.17:8]. And as they rested, they fell into discussion about the Jungle they had just passed through.

*Mercy* “We are surely debtors to Mercy alone for safely escaping the evils of that place. As fearsome and hideous as the Giant and his Beast were, it seems to my heart that the voice of the Monkeys was the most distressing of all.”

*Hope.* “They are at his command and do incessantly beat upon the ears of all in order to wear away any resistance to acknowledging *Evolution*. You see that they are quiet whenever any who will bow pass by.”

*Valiant* “This Giant would have all men believe that the Heavens and the Earth (though he would call it Universe) are the product of time plus chance, without the involvement of the Creator of all.”

*Grace* “Why, even a young girl like me can see the Folly of such nonsense. Even a child knows that Nothing plus No-One does not equal Everything!”

*Hon.* “’Tis true, my sister, yet this *Darwin* would have all believe that his creation of that Beast is Scientific Fact, rather than his own invention. And the Monkeys proclaim it so loudly and frequently, that one can scarcely think of or hear anything to the contrary.”

*Chr.* “But it is not Science at all. Science, by definition, deals with conclusions drawn from Observable and Repeatable phenomena. This Doctrine of the Giant and his Beast was neither observed by anyone,

nor can it be repeated so as to test its validity. It is nothing more than a wicked Philosophy to beguile the souls of men.”

*Channa.* “Why, I think it takes more faith to believe his fantastical creation than it does to believe the Word of the Blessed and only Creator of all.”

*Feeble.* “Even to my little understanding, the first proposal of his seems impossible, but what of his second, that our God employed *Evolution* as His servant?”

*Great.* “That is more wicked still, though many have been deceived thereby. That his Beast had no hand in the work of Creation is evident on several accounts. First, the Scriptures are quite explicit that all flesh is not the same flesh, but that there are distinct kinds; one for birds, one for fish, and another for man, etc. [I Cor.15:39]. *Darwin* would have us to believe that all flesh has developed from one by gradual change.

“Secondly, if man emerged from lower life forms, how is he any different than a mere beast? And if different, does this not mean that one believes the Word of God that man was a direct Creation of God, made in His own Image, and not that of monkeys? Does not the Scripture call *Adam*, the first man? [I Cor.15:45]. Yet this Giant would have us imagine a company of such creatures, male and female both, developing at different places at the same time. This is in direct contradiction to the Doctrine of God which plainly says that the Heavens and all their host were made by the Word of the Lord, not by gradual change from one form to another [Ps.33:6].

“This is the real reason behind *Darwin’s* Invention. It is an attempt to remove moral accountability from man. Apart from our Lord and His Word, everything becomes purely natural; and nature is neither good nor evil, it simply is. And so, according to the Giant, man can do as he pleases, for morals are Relative since he is nothing more than the product of time and chance.”

“Thirdly, if Theistic Evolution is true, it abolishes all basis of Morality. Man is then nothing more than another animal. And there are no morals among animals. There is no such thing as Fornication among Chickens. Theft is not considered a crime by Dogs. And surely Man will be judged for his sin, but not the animals.

“Fourthly, the Scriptures are quite certain that all that was made was not made out of things existing, as fashioned from materials at hand, but rather was created out of nothing by the Power of God [Heb.11:3]. This alone exposes the folly of Theistic Evolution.

“Lastly, for now at least, is the fact that the Heavens and Earth were Created in six days, not six million years. See what God has spoken to us in the Book of Moses. Man shall work six days and rest on the seventh, for in six days the Lord made the Heavens and the Earth. If these are not literal days but some long ages, is a man then to work for thousands of years before he ever rests? [Ex.31:15-17].

“Brethren, this Giant *Darwin* is a deceiver and his Monster *Evolution* is a wicked contrivance in order to cast down the Blessed and only Creator from His Majesty and Sovereignty over the men He has made.”

*Ready.* “My dear Brethren, I don’t know how to thank you for all your Resistance against these evils which have resulted in our Deliverance as it is this day. Your Swords, your Kindness, and Prayers have been my Comfort and Victory. May your Reward be sure from Him who judges righteously.”

*Chr.* “All Praise is to the Lord of Hosts whose the Battle is, and who Delivers us, for we are powerless against the Foes set against us round about [2 Chron.20:12, 15]. To Him belongs the Glory, both now and forevermore. Amen.”

With thanks to God for Rescue, Refreshment, and Rest, the Company arose unto the Journey once again. Now they soon came unto that portion mentioned to them previously by the Shepherds, where the air naturally tended to make one Drowsy. At first they supposed that their Tiredness was due to the rigors of the Journey and the Battles they had just recently engaged in, not knowing that they had entered the Enchanted Ground.

It was nearly completely overgrown with thorns and thistles excepting, here and there, where were found neatly maintained and inviting Arbors. Now some say that it is questionable whether a man will ever rise again should he sit or sleep thereon; which caused me to reflect, that not all Comforts along the Way are placed there by the King.

Seeing that the place was wild and tangled, and not knowing what may be lurking in the bush, the Brethren divided their forces among themselves, some going before and others following up the rear. Thus with Swords drawn, with the Women and Weaker ones between, they cautiously proceeded watchfully lest, perchance, they meet with some Fiend, Dragon, Giant, or Thief.

They had not gone far when a great Mist and Darkness fell upon them so that they could scarcely see one another. Therefore, they were forced for some time to feel for one another, by words; for they did not walk by Sight.

The Way here was very Wearisome with much grunting, puffing, and sighing as they struggled along. Through encouraging words, though, they continued to make Progress [Eph.4:29; Col.4:6]. While one tumbles over a root, another stuck fast in the dirt. One cries out, "I am down", and another, "Where are you?", while still another calls, "The bush has gotten hold on me and I cannot get myself loose."

So through many such difficulties compounded by the swirling Mist, they pressed on and came into a small clearing where an attractive Arbor had been set. To all appearances it was finely constructed, beautified with lush greenery, and furnished with comfortable benches, cushioned with pillows.

This, you must think considering their situation, was most tempting to some to pause here awhile. And so it was that *James*, being the youngest, ventured to suggest that a short nap would do them all well before they went on.

*Chr.* "Do you not remember that *Experience*, the Shepherd, warned us about Sleeping on the Enchanted Ground? Therefore, let us not sleep as others do, but let us watch and be sober" [I Thess.5:6].

*Great* "Your father has spoken to you and to us well. This Enchanted Ground is one of the last refuges that the Enemy has against Pilgrims. It is therefore as you can see, placed near the end of the Journey, and that by crafty strategy.

"For the Enemy reasons thus, that, 'When will these Fools be so desirous to sit down as when they are Weary? And when will they likely be most Weary except when near the end of their Journey?'"

"Let us therefore not be ignorant of his Schemes [2 Cor.2:11]. For this is not the time for Sleep, for now Salvation is nearer to us than when we believed" [Rom.13:11].

*James* "I acknowledge myself to be in a fault. I can only thank God that I am not here alone, left to my own reasoning. I see that it is true what the Wise Man said, 'Two are better than one. For if either of them falls, the one will lift up his Companion'" [Eccl.4:9, 10].

*Hon.* "It is true, this Brotherly conversation does our souls much good, especially in a place such as this. Let us continue in such for our own profit as we go on. Tell us, good brother *Hopeful*, how it came about that you left Vanity and took to the life of a Pilgrim."

*Hope.* "Well, for long I had been delighted in the things of Vanity such as are sold at the Fair. It was when your Company came to our Town that I first heard of the Way of the King. Your lives and Words strangely worked within my mind and made me see the Danger and Vanity of them all."

*Despond.* "Did you immediately yield to that first Conviction of Sin?"

*Hope.* "No, I was not willing at the beginning to admit the Evil of Sin, nor of the sure Judgment that comes from committing it. I was ignorant that this was the work of God in my soul. Besides, Sin was still sweet to my Flesh as were my old Companions whom I did not wish to part with. In short, I hardened my heart against these troubling and frightening Convictions."

*Chr.* "What was it that brought your Sins to mind again?"

*Hope.* "O, many things. If I met a Good man in the streets, I would become ashamed. Or if I heard any portion of the Bible read, or learned that one of my neighbors was sick or had suddenly died, it weighed heavily upon my heart. But especially the Conviction arose when I thought that I must surely and quickly come to Judgment for my Sins."

*Feeble.* "What did you think should have been the Remedy for your Guilt?"

*Hope.* "At first, I thought I must endeavor to improve my life by Religious Efforts, such as attending Religious Meetings, Fasting, Prayers, Tithing, and things like these."

*Valiant* “How did you realize the Folly of these to cleanse your Soul?”

*Hope.* “Truthfully, these never gave me Rest of heart though I diligently adopted them. It was particularly as I read in the Scriptures things such as, ‘All our righteousness deeds are as filthy rags’ [Isa.64:6], ‘By the Works of the Law, no man shall be justified’ [Gal.2:16], or ‘When you have done all these things, say, “We are unprofitable”’ [Lk.17:10], and many other passages like these.

“I then began to reason thus within myself: If all my Righteous acts are filthy rags; if by deeds no man can be Justified; and if when we have done all we are still unprofitable, then it was utter Foolishness to imagine Religious Efforts a means of obtaining Heaven.

“It also came into my mind that no amount of moral Reform can amend previous Crimes. If I had become indebted to a shop-keeper for some amount of money for past purchases, if I began to pay cash for all present and future purchases, that past Debt would still be outstanding against me. Furthermore, that shop-keeper could lawfully sue me to court and have me cast into Prison until that Debt be paid.

“Another thing that greatly troubled me was that, if I looked honestly at the best I had done, I could still see Sin in it, mixing itself with the best of my Efforts. I thus saw that my Efforts were worse than useless.”

*Matthew* “Did you see any solution then to your Conviction?”

*Hope.* “None at all. I was Burdened, Confounded, and Despairing, not knowing what to do now. It was then that our dear brother, *Faithful*, told me that what I needed was another type of Righteousness, even that of the Lord Jesus Christ.

“This sounded strange to my ears until he explained that He, as a Sinless Substitute, suffered the just punishment for all my sins, that God the Judge of all had accepted this Sacrifice as satisfying all His Righteous demands against sinful men, and He was willing to Forgive all on this basis [Rom.3:21-26].

“Furthermore, He convinced me from the Eternal Book that our Lord Jesus is yet Alive, having been raised from the dead [I Cor.15:3, 4], and will welcome all who come to Him by Faith [Jn.1:12]. He told me to

come to Him and see, for I was invited to Come [Mt.11:28].

“So, I prayed something like this: ‘God, be merciful to me, a Sinner [Lk.18:13], for against You and You only have I sinned and done what is evil in Your sight [Ps.51:4]. I believe that Jesus Christ has come into the world to Save sinners [I Tim.1:15] and that He has borne the Punishment for my sins in His own Body on the Cross [I Pet.2:24]. Lord, I have gone astray wickedly. I am now returning to the Shepherd and Overseer of my soul, Jesus Christ my Lord [I Pet.2:25]. Accept me by Your Grace, wash me and I shall be whiter than snow, hide your face from my Sins, blot out my Iniquities, and Create in me a Clean Heart, O God [Ps.51:7-10]. O Living Christ, I come to You. Cast me not away according to Your Promise; receive me [Jn.6:37-40] and magnify Your Grace by Saving my soul, through Your Son Jesus Christ. Amen.”

*Samuel* “And did you receive that Cleansing and Welcome?”

*Hope.* “Yes, and at that very moment, I was Justified in His Blood and Righteousness [Rom.5:9], Washed and Renewed by his Spirit [Tit.3:5], and made a Partaker of His Life and Heavenly Calling [Jn.15:4, 5; Heb.3:1].

“I saw that all that is in the World is Vanity which made me greatly ashamed of the Vileness of my former life and Humbled me with a sense of my own Ignorance that I had never, until that moment, had one worthy thought of the Beauty of Jesus Christ.

“At that instant a change took place in my Heart. It made me to love a Holy Life and to do something for the honor and Glory of the name of the Lord Jesus.”

*Joseph* “Truly the Fear of the Lord is the beginning of Wisdom, and the knowledge of the Holy One is Understanding” [Prov.9:10].

*Feeble.* “Yes, this conversation has done my soul good as it strengthens my feeble knees [Heb.12:12, 13] and what has been weak in my mind up until now. But do go on a bit, and expound further on the Fear of the Lord.”

*Great.* “It is a foundational theme, without which no Progress can be made as a Pilgrim. The Wise Man has said, ‘The Fear of the Lord is to Hate Evil’ [Prov.8:13]. Now it is this hatred of Evil that moves the heart towards Christ in order to know and Walk in the Truth of His

Word and Ways. Nothing else can properly be called Wisdom.”

*Valiant* “Christ Himself warned us to Fear the One who is able to destroy both soul and body in Hell [Lk.12:5]. It is with this Godly Fear that we are both to serve God acceptably [Heb.12:28] and to work out our own Salvation [Phil.2:12]. When we consider the Power of His Fury, who would not Fear Him?” [Ps.90:11].

*Chr.* “Indeed, the Fear of the Lord is Clean and will endure forever [Ps.19:9] as the source of knowing His Secret Counsel [Ps.25:14] and which opens the Storehouse of Goodness [Ps.31:19], Lovingkindness [Ps.103:11], Provision [Ps.111:5], and Blessing [Ps.115:13].

“We should therefore always Tremble for Fear of Him [Ps.119:120], for He takes great Pleasure in those who do” [Ps.147:11].

*Channa.* “O, how this good Instruction does make my soul yearn to be taught of His Ways! I can only cry aloud, ‘O Lord, unite my heart to Fear Your name!’” [Ps.86:11].

And then did the Brethren join and sing:

*He who would go as a Pilgrim down here,  
Needs Tremble with caution and godly Fear.  
For He who Judges and casts into Hell,  
Watches if evil’s despised very well.*

And so with these and many other encouraging words they spoke to one another in order to strengthen their feet in the Way. Now the Mist moving about them became even heavier until a great Darkness was upon them and they could no longer see the Path. In such times, a man can easily lose his Way.

Therefore, the Brethren did stop in order to bring out the Lantern by which they walked until the break of Day [2 Pet.1:19]. And had they not been careful to walk by its Light, they had in all probability been smothered to death. For just before them at the end of a deceptive and clean path nearly parallel to their own, was a deep Pit full of nothing but mud placed there on purpose to destroy Pilgrims.

Thus they walked through the Darkness with His Lamp shining over their head [Job 29:3], praying all the while that Light might arise in

the Darkness for the Upright [Ps.112:4]. Shortly thereafter, the Mists began to disperse and they could see their Way more clearly.

It was then that they heard before them a Solemn noise as of one who was greatly concerned. As they drew nearer, they made out the figure of a man upon his knees, with hands and eyes uplifted to One who dwelt Above. They passed by softly so as not to intrude upon his Prayer.

After they had gone past, the man arose in haste and began to run towards the Heavenly City. When he had reached up to them, the Brethren called to him to join in their Company along the Way. Now the man’s name was *Standfast* and he was a Pilgrim indeed.

He looked over his shoulder as if not trusting them. And it was then that he recognized Mr. *Honest* among them and slowed and then smiled, saying, “I am more than glad to meet you thus upon this Road, good Companion.”

*Hon.* “And I as well rejoice to meet you upon your knees, Friend. You prayed as a Fervent Righteous man as I recall” [Jas.5:16].

Upon hearing this, he blushed, for he was a humble man of secret prayer, not as one who loves to be praying in public [Mt.6:5, 6]. “Well,” said he, “I had good cause; in fact, I prayed as one whose life depended upon it for I had just been assaulted by a most persuasive Temptress, Madame *Bubble*. I don’t know if you have ever encountered her?”

*Hon.* “Ah! There are few more alluring and dangerous than her. She, I think, is rather tall, very beautiful, who always speaks smoothly with an enticing smile while fingering the money in her great purse with much delight. Is she the one?”

*Stand.* “A better portrait of her could not have been given. I perceive that you know her indeed. Well, let me tell you, this woman is a Witch. While I was both weary and sleepy, she presented herself to me and offered unto me her body, her purse, and her bed.

“I repulsed her more than once, for she was very persistent, even smiling at my rebukes. She told me that if I would give myself to her, body and soul, she would provide me with Delights ‘til the end of my days, for, said she, ‘I am the Mistress of the World.’ It was just then that you met me Crying out for Help from the Throne of Grace” [Heb.4:16].

Hon. “And, blessed be the name of the Lord, Help He gave you from Above. But let me tell you more about this Harlot-Witch. It is because of her Sorcery that this place is Enchanted [Rev.18:3, 23]. Whoever lays down his head in her lap had just as well of laid down his life [Jud.16:19, 20].

“She will talk with any man, and whoever sets his eyes upon her beauty is accounted to be the enemy of God [Jas.4:4; 1 Jn.2:15-17]. She promises Pleasures, Prosperity, Promotion, and, in short, all manner of Sensual Delights in her company.

“Where you might have been taken by her it is best not to imagine other than to say that she would have drawn you into many foolish and harmful Lusts which plunge men into Ruin and Destruction [1 Tim.6:9, 10]. Therefore, good Master *Standfast*, be as your name is, and having done all, Stand” [Eph.6:13].

At this discourse, there was a mixture of joy and trembling among the Pilgrims, but at last they broke out in this song:

*What danger is the Pilgrim in?  
How many are his Foes?  
How many ways there are to Sin,  
No living mortal knows.  
Some who are shy of the ditch yet can  
Lie tumbling in the mire.  
Some, though they shun the frying-pan,  
Do leap into the fire.*

## 26 IGNORANCE & THE RIVER

By then they had passed beyond the sleepy Mist and enchantments of this dangerous place and entered again into the Light of Day where they moved with great contentment in the cooling breeze. Now behind them, and unnoticed since he traveled by himself, *Ignorance* came into sight and drew near to the Company. And so it was that they were afforded yet one more chance to direct his mind in the Right Way.

*Chr.* “How is it now, *Ignorance*, did you manage well over this last bit of ground without mishap?”

*Ignor.* “O, very well, thank you. The way was Sunny and Smooth all along and most accommodating to Travelers.”

And now the Saints were somewhat in amazement, wondering if he had indeed made his Journey along the same Route. But there was, they knew, only one Path through that Enchanted Ground. So *Great-Heart* inquired of him further, saying, “Did you not become Sleepy and find the going difficult in the Mist of Darkness?”

*Ignor.* “Why, no, I was not drowsy in the least, and as for Darkness, I met with none but had Sunshine all the way.”

And then I came to understand that it is only those who are Awake that can become Drowsy, and those alone who know the Light that can discern the Darkness [Mt.6:23].

*Stand.* “But did you not meet with anyone along the Way?”

*Ignor.* “Only one lovely sister whom I’m sure the King had sent to comfort and refresh me along my journey. Why, she spread a feast of fineries that filled my belly with dainties from around the World under a most pleasant Arbor where I reclined in her company for some time.

Ah, a fine sister indeed!”

Then did the Pilgrims gaze at each other knowingly, perceiving that he had been entertained by none other than Madame *Bubble*, the Enemy to Pilgrims and Friend to the Ignorant in the World. They therefore had all the more urgency to impress upon him his need of true Conversion.

*Chr.* “How now, *Ignorance*, is it well between your soul and God?”

*Ignor.* “I hope so, for I am always full of good intentions that come into my mind to comfort me as I walk; like thinking of God and Heaven.”

*Hope.* “But even the Devil and damned souls think of the same.”

*Ignor.* “But I think of them and desire them, having left all to gain them.”

*Hon.* “So do many who will never arrive there. ‘The soul of the Sluggard desires and has nothing’ [Prov.13:4]. What makes you think you’ve left all?”

*Ignor.* “Why, my heart tells me so.”

*Feeble* “Even I know that he who trusts in his heart is a Fool [Prov.28:26] and that this heart is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked” [Jer.17:9].

*Ignor.* “O, but my heart and my life are in agreement, therefore my Hope is well grounded, for my heart assures me it is so because I have good thoughts and a good life.”

*Valiant* “The only good thoughts that one can have are those that agree with the Word of God. And the only good deeds that one has are those that are produced in him by the Spirit of God, for the flesh profits nothing [Jn.6:63].

“Unless you have passed the same Judgment upon yourself that the Word of God does, you have never yet had one good thought about yourself. The Scriptures tell you plainly that there is none Righteous and none that does good [Rom.3:10, 12].

“It also says that every imagination of the heart of a man is only Evil continually [Gen.6:5]. When we think thus about ourselves, our thoughts are good.”

*Ignor.* “I will never believe that my heart is bad like this!”

*Great.* “Then you shall never have even one decent and acceptable thought about yourself in your entire life. You thus have only Natural thoughts about your condition which are described by the Book of God as evil, perverse, crooked, and devious [Prov.2:14, 15]. Unless you see yourself to be in this state before God, you will never obtain the Salvation which is in Christ.”

*Ignor.* “O, but I already trust in Christ who will Justify me before God by graciously accepting my obedience to His Law. He makes my Religious Duties pleasing to His Father by virtue of His Merits. Thus I do my best and He makes up for the rest.”

*Valiant* “This is a faith which will be thrown out of the courts of Heaven. If Righteousness comes through your Religious Duties, Christ died in vain [Gal.2:21]. Now the fact that He did die proves that your Good Works are not good at all, else He never need have died to save you, if there was even one thing you could do that met with the approval of God.

“Secondly, your so-called obedience is nullified in its entirety by the sentence of the Word of God: ‘Whoever keeps the whole Law and stumbles in one point has become guilty of all’ [Jas.2:10]. Your imagined good works only therefore condemn you the more since you are decidedly not good in all points.

“Then, you have vainly imagined that your best Efforts are equally acceptable alongside the Righteousness of Christ as if they were on the same level of perfection. But even the best of your contributions are as abominable as filthy rags, which, if brought into His presence, will certainly result in you and them being cast into the place of everlasting uncleanness [Isa.64:6].

“You say that you will never believe your heart to be as Evil as the Lord Jesus says it is. You therefore make Him out to be a Liar and yourself the judge of Truth. Furthermore, Christ Jesus has told you that unless you Hate your own life, you cannot be His Disciple; which is the very thing you refuse to do [Lk.14:26]. Thus you show that by all means you will save yourself and hold onto what you esteem to be good about yourself and therefore disqualify yourself for True Salvation which only comes by losing your life” [Mk.8:35].

*Ignor.* “What! Would you have me trust in what Christ has done for me apart from my own Efforts? Why, this would let loose a person to live however he chose according to his own Lust!”

*Chr.* “Ignorance is your name, and as is your name, so are you. You are Ignorant of the Provision of Righteousness through Christ’s Redeeming work on the Cross alone. You are equally Ignorant of the Means of obtaining that Righteousness, by Grace through Faith alone and not by Works [Eph.2:8, 9]. And, you are Ignorant of the true Effects of this Saving Faith which is to win over, Transform, and Renew the heart of man by Uniting the soul with the Living Christ [2 Cor.5:15, 17]. By this I fear that you have never known the Lord Jesus Christ in truth. Have you ever had Him Revealed to your heart from Heaven?”

*Ignor.* “So, you are among those who are given over to Revelations! I do believe that all of what you are saying is nothing more than the fruit of sick minds, and that my faith is ever bit as good as your own.”

*Stand.* “How then do you propose to come to know the Son of God if He be not Revealed to your heart from Above? The words of our Lord are quite plain, ‘No one knows the Son except the Father; nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and anyone to whom the Son wills to Reveal Him’ [Mt.11:27].

“By this answer of yours I see that the Word of God has its fulfillment in you according to what has been Written, ‘A Natural man does not accept the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishness to him; neither can he know them, because they are Spiritually discerned’ [1 Cor.2:14].

“It is our Prayer that the eyes of your heart might be Enlightened so that you might see the Wretchedness of your own heart, the full Provision of Christ Jesus the Lord for Righteousness, and the exceeding greatness of His Power to Save you from both the Condemnation and Corruption of your Sins” [Eph.1:18, 19].

*Ignor.* “Well, I can see that I cannot keep pace with you. My heart tells me it is best that you walk in your Way while I continue to walk in mine.”

Thus it was that they separated after this final Word to his heart:

*Well, Ignorance, will you yet foolish be,  
To slight good Counsel, ten times given thee?  
And if you yet refuse it, you shall know,  
Before long, the Evil of your doing so.  
Remember, man, in time; Listen, do not fear;  
Good Counsel taken well Saves; therefore hear.  
But if you yet shall slight it, you will be  
The Loser, Ignorance, we assure thee.*

Now I saw in my dream that shortly they came to that most Delightful of Places in the Way; Beulah land in the region of Hephzibah (this is, of course, not our native land and so the language is foreign. By translation they mean, “Married”, and, “My delight is in her”) [Isa.62:4]. This was the final Destination this side of the River that separates all things here from the Heavenly City.

Found in this land are glimpses into the City beyond, where the very Air breathed is mingled with that Above. Here they had renewed assurances of that great Bridal Covenant entered into so long ago [Isa.62:5]. From there can also be heard the Voice of the Bridegroom calling, “Say to the Daughter of Zion, Behold, your Salvation comes! Behold, His Reward is with Him!” [Isa.62:11]; and all the inhabitants of the Country called the Pilgrims, “The Holy People, the Redeemed of the Lord, Sought Out, a City not forsaken” [Isa.62:12].

Pleasant to the ear was the continual ringing of bells joining harmoniously with the golden notes of trumpets. Their chambers of rest were perfumed with the most fragrant of spices and their bodies anointed with the Best of Oils [1 Jn.2:27] to prepare them to pass through the River when the time should come.

In this Place there was also kept a Record of the names and deeds of those who had been Pilgrims of old and had gone over before them. Therein was noted how the River, at times, seemed nearly to be Dry for some, while, for others, it has Overflowed its banks. This, they were told, depended upon the deepness or shallowness of one’s Faith in the King as they crossed.

Now as they considered the River, they noted that there was no bridge wherein to cross and that the waters appeared very deep. Now those that escorted them about the Place informed them that all must pass through those waters if the Gate to the City is to be reached [I Cor.15:50].

To this news, the Pilgrims inquired if there were no other Way to the Gate; and they were told that, since the foundation of the world, only two had been received at the City without passing through that River, namely, *Enoch* and *Elijah*.

About this time, there came a Post from the Heavenly City with a matter of great importance to *Christian* and his wife, *Christianna*. The contents were as follows, "Hail, Dearly Beloved! I have sent to you to inform you that the Master calls for you, and expects that you will stand in His Presence, in clothes of Immortality, within these next ten days."

As evidence that he was a true messenger, he presented each with a Token. First, to *Christian*, he presented a small Scroll upon which was inscribed, "Fear not, for I have Redeemed you; I have called you by Name; you are Mine! When you pass through the Waters, I will be with you" [Isa.43:1, 2]. Now *Christian* was instructed to eat this though it was decidedly bitter to the tongue.

To *Christianna*, the Token was an Arrow with a point sharpened with Love upon which was written, "Having a desire to Depart and be with Christ which is far Better" [Phil.1:23]. This she was to let easily enter her heart.

And so it was that they summoned their Sons and Daughters that they might impart to them their final Blessing before crossing into that City beyond. And *Christian* thus addressed himself to his Sons in this manner,

*Chr.* "The Lord has shone forth from Zion in Mercy upon my Soul from the days of the City of Destruction up until now. Throughout the Journey's length my heart has cried, 'O send out Your Light and Your Truth, let them lead me; Let them bring me to your Holy Hill and to Your Dwelling Places. Then I will go to the altar of God, to God my exceeding Joy' [Ps.43:3, 4].

"And now, my Sons, that longed for day has arrived: I go to Him

who has led me all the Way and is bringing me safely to His Heavenly Kingdom. Therefore, let this that I have sought and obtained also be your Desire and Portion from Him who loves you well; even from Him who loves His own as He does His own Beloved Son [Jn.17:26].

"Listen to the voice of a father; I have loved you well and taught you truly: There is none like the God of Jeshurun who rides the Heavens to your Help. He is your Dwelling place to all generations and underneath are the Everlasting Arms [Deut.33:26, 27]. Abide there! Flee for Refuge to the Shade of this Mighty Rock!

"Let your eyes be fixed straight ahead of you; turn not to the right or the left [Prov.4:25-27], but keep the Lord's commandments for your own good and that of your children. Fear the Lord your God, walk in all His Ways and Love Him and serve the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul [Deut.10:12]. This will be your Wisdom and this will be your Blessing in the Land to where you are going and before all men here below [Deut.4:6].

"This Word which has been commanded you shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall Meditate therein day and night; then you will have good success [Josh.1:8]. For it is not an idle Word unto you; indeed, it is your Life. And by it you shall prolong your days in the land [Deut.32:47].

"You shall therefore Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your might. And these Words shall be on your heart and you shall teach them diligently to your sons and shall talk of them when you sit in your house and when you walk by the way and when you lie down and when you rise up [Deut.6:5-7].

"And now, I am going the way of all the earth, yet I know that I shall behold His face in Righteousness and be satisfied with His likeness when I awake [Ps.17:15]. Finally, my Sons, be on the Alert, stand firm in the Faith, act like Men, be Strong, and let all that you do be done in Love [I Cor.16:13, 14]. And now, I bid you farewell until we meet on that Blessed Shore."

Now you can imagine that few eyes were dry having heard this from their beloved father whom they Honored, Loved, and Obeyed. Then *Christianna* did address their Daughters thus,

*Channa.* “My dearest Darlings whom I love as my own soul, how can I bear to part from you, and yet, is not our Bridegroom He whom our hearts have yearned for all these years? Will I shrink from going to Him who has allured and ravished my heart all through the Wilderness of this life?

“No, my Daughters, I arise. He has bid me to come to Him upon the Mountains of spices, to look down with Him from the Summit of His Heights [S.of S.4:8] and I shall go to my Beloved in whom I greatly delight [S.of S. 2:3].

“I have schooled you to be true Daughters of Sarah [I Pet.3:6]. Remember your mother in all of your ways. Crowns of Virtue you shall be unto my Sons [Prov.12:4]; fairer than the moon in your meek and quiet adornment [I Pet.3:4]. Continue as loving keepers at home, entertain Strangers, wash the Saint’s feet, assist those in Distress; so shall you be saved, and so shall the Word of our God not be dishonored [Tit.2:4, 5; I Tim.5:10; 2:15].

“Neglect not these, your babes. From upon your lap may their little ears hear Eternal Words of Kindness of Him who is the Way. And do I need even mention the poor? Ah, no, you Love them well, what need I say? Only to Love them the more, Abound all the more, patiently endure all for Him who loves the downcast and afflicted of earth. Yes, may your Love increase and abound for one and all [I Thess.3:12].

“And now... Is that His Voice? Yes, yes, I have heard it, there is none like it! O, Glorious moment! O, rapturous embrace! I can see Him, my Dears! I can see Him!

“Yes, my King, my Groom, my God, I come! My Robes are ready. My heart is there already and now I follow to You with love.”

And these were the last words they could hear on their side of the River as she, with her husband, entered the Waters together. Now the water was cold but had to be endured in order to reach the City. Just some few steps into its flow, *Christian* began to sink in a deep hole.

*Chr.* “I sink in deep Waters; the Billows go over my head, all the Waves go over me!” [Jonah 2:3].

*Channa.* “Be of good cheer, my Dear Husband, I feel the bottom and it is good.”

*Chr.* “Ah, my Darling, the sorrows of Death have compassed me about [Ps.18:4, 5], I shall not see the Land to which I desire to come.”

And with that a great darkness and horror fell upon him so that he could not see before him. Also he in a great measure lost his senses, so that he could not remember nor talk coherently about any of those sweet refreshments he had met with in the Way of his Pilgrimage.

All his talk was that he would perish in the River and never see the City and his mind was filled with thoughts of the Sins he had committed. Even he would cry out in fright at evil spirits that appeared to trouble him in his distress.

Now you can only think what this did to the heart of his dear Wife who did what she could to keep his head above Water. She attempted to comfort him with Words such as, “Darling, I see the Gate, and Shining Ones standing by to receive us!”

*Chr.* “It is you alone they are waiting for; you have been lovingly devoted from the day you set out on Pilgrimage. If I was Right, He would rise to my Help. But as it is, I am left alone with my Sins in this River.”

*Channa.* “Do not say so, Dear husband, do not let His former Lovingkindness depart from your sight, for there is no man that can live and not see death or deliver his soul from the power of Hell [Ps.89:48, 49]. It is the Wicked who have no pains in their death [Ps.73:4]. Look up, my beloved, Fix your eyes on Jesus, the Author and Finisher of your Faith!” [Heb.12:2].

*Chr.* “O! I see Him again! I remember now what He wrote to me, ‘Fear not, for I have Redeemed you; I have called you by name; you are Mine! When you pass through the Waters I will be with you.’ Yes! He spoke this to me! He is with me in this River! I am His! It is no more my Sins that I see but His blessed Redemption which has washed them all away!”

Thus did *Christian* find his footing on solid ground and they crossed over the rest of the River which now had become quite shallow to both of them.

Now, about this same time, many other of the Brethren also received their Summons from the King to appear before Him in His Presence. Some of the accounts of their last words on the River bank are

as follows.

*Ready-to-Halt* “I shall have no more need of these Crutches, since yonder are Chariots for me to ride. Welcome Life!”

*Feeble-Mind* “When I am gone, I do wish that you, Mr. *Valiant-for-Truth*, would take my Feeble Mind and bury it in the Dunghill that it would never be a trouble to any Pilgrim who comes after me.”

*Honest* “I die but make no will. As for my Honesty, it shall go with me; as it will with any who have it who come after me. I have had with me as a constant companion along my Way a Good Conscience which will assist me across this Overflowing Stream.”

*Valiant-for-Truth* “Though with great Difficulty I have come to this point with great hazard to life and body, yet today I shall see His Face who endured all the contradiction of sinners against Himself [Heb.12:3]. I therefore do not regret in the least all my trial for the Truth.

“I leave my Sword to him who shall follow me on Pilgrimage and my Courage and Skill to him who can get it. My Scars I carry with me, to be a witness for me, that I have fought His Battles, who will now be my exceeding great Reward.

“And now, Death, where is your sting and O Grave, your Victory?”

Thus it was that they all safely got over to the other side where they were met with Welcome from Above and escorted to their Everlasting Home.

# 27

## THE CITY

Now I saw in my dream, that as each one crossed the River, they were met on the opposite bank by Shining Ones who saluted them, saying, “We are Ministering Spirits sent forth to minister to those who are Heirs of Salvation” [Heb.1:14]. They did therefore assist them with ease to ascend the mighty Hill upon which the City was founded though it was higher than the Clouds.

As you can well imagine, all their talk was about the Glory of the Place and Him who dwelt therein. Now some of what they discussed I can relate, for who could possibly tell all that was said or could be spoken about that City?

*Shining* “We are going to Mount Zion, the Heavenly Jerusalem, the innumerable Company of Angels, and to the Spirits of just men made Perfect [Heb.12:22-24]. There you will enter the Paradise of God wherein is the Tree of Life from which you shall eat its never fading Fruits [Rev.2:7; 22:2] being clothed in Robes of White [Rev.3:4].

“No more shall you see any of those things which you have known below; Sorrow, Sickness, Affliction, and Death, for the former things are passed away [Rev.21:4]. You are going now to *Abraham, Isaac,* and *Jacob* along with the Prophets [Mt.8:11], each walking in Righteousness. Every day your walk and talk will be with the King, for He will dwell among you and you shall be His people” [Rev.21:3].

*Pilgrims* “What must we do in that holy Place?”

*Shining* “You must receive Comfort for all your Toil, and have Joy for all your Sorrow; you must reap what you have sown [Gal.6:8, 9], even the Fruit of all your Prayers and Tears and Sufferings for the King along the Way. In that Place you must wear Crowns of Gold, and enjoy the perpetual sight of the Holy One, for you shall see Him as He is [1 Jn.3:2].

“There also you shall serve Him [Rev.22:3] continually with Praise and Thanksgiving far better than you did below because of the weakness of your flesh then. Your eyes will be delighted with seeing His face [Rev.22:4]. You will enjoy the Company of a great multitude of fellow Pilgrims all clothed with Glory and Majesty, fit to ride out with the King of Glory Himself [Rev.19:14].

“When He shall come with the Sound of the Trumpet in the Clouds, you shall come with Him [I Thess.4:13-17]. When He sits upon the Throne of Judgment, you shall sit with Him [Rev.3:21] and pass Sentence with Him upon all the workers of Iniquity, be they men or Angels [Dan.7:9, 10; I Cor.6:2, 3], for they were both His and your Enemies.”

*Now, now look how the holy Pilgrims ride,  
Clouds are their Chariots, Angels are their Guide;  
Who would not here for Him all Hazards run  
That thus provides for His, when this world's done?*

Now I saw that while they were drawing near to the Gate, that one stood there knocking already, though he had no escort to accompany him. As I looked more closely, I discovered that it was *Ignorance* of whom I have written before.

It seems that upon arriving at the River, and since no Post was sent for him to appear before the King, he found a boatman named *Vain-Hope* who conveyed him over the River with not half so much trouble as the others. And, as I said, no one of the Shining Ones met him on the opposite bank.

Nevertheless, he proceeded upwards to the Gate though he had not the least encouragement to do so. Above the Gate he read in letters of Gold, “Blessed are they that do His Commandments, that they may have the right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City” [Rev.22:14].

Here he began to Knock, supposing that Entrance should be quickly gained by him. But he was asked by the men who looked over the

top of the Gate, “From where do you come, and what do you want?” He Ignorantly answered, “I ate and drank in the Presence of the King, and He taught in our streets” [Lk.13:26].

When they asked for his Certificate that they might show it to the King, he fumbled in his bosom and found none. Then they said, “Do you have none?” But he was unable to answer them a word [Mt.22:12].

They then reported all to the King who promptly commanded two Shining Ones to bind him hand and foot and cast him into outer Darkness where there was Weeping and Gnashing of teeth [Mt.22:13]. And then I considered that there was a Way to Hell even from the Gates of Heaven as well as from the City of Destruction.

Not like this was the reception of the Pilgrims. While they were drawing near the Gate, a whole company of the Heavenly Host came out to meet them; to whom it was said by the two Shining Ones, “These are the ones who have loved our Lord when they were in the World and have left all for His Holy Name. He has sent us to fetch them, and we have brought them thus far that they might go in and behold their Redeemer’s face with Joy.”

Then the Heavenly Host gave a great shout, saying, “Blessed are they that are called to the Marriage Supper of the Lamb” [Rev.19:9]. There came out at this time many of the King’s Trumpeters, clothed in white and shining raiment, who with loud and melodious noises, made Heaven echo with the sound. These Trumpeters saluted the Saints with ten thousand Welcomes while surrounding them on every side, continuously sounding their high harmonious notes so it seemed as if all Heaven had come out to meet them.

So Joyous was the sound, so Loving was the reception, and so exhilarating the sight of Angels that they nearly thought they were in Heaven before actually entering the Gate. As the sight of the City came within view, they could hear all the bells therein begin to ring for their welcome.

Beyond all of this was the warm and joyful thoughts that they had about their own Dwelling there in such a Place and with such a Company; and that forever and forever. O, by what tongue or pen can their glorious Joy be expressed!

Thus they came up to the Gate and read its golden text, “Blessed are they that do His Commandments, that they may have the right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City.” Then, as they were instructed to do, they called at the Gate. When they did, *Enoch, Moses, Elijah, Paul*, and other of the King’s notable ones looked over the Wall to whom it was said, “These Pilgrims are come from the City of Destruction, for the Love that they have to our King.” Then each of them gave their Certificates which they had received at the beginning.

These were carried to the King who commanded with a loud Voice, “Open the Gates, that the Righteous Nation which keeps the Truth may enter in!” [Isa.26:2].

Now I saw in my dream that they went in at the Gate; and behold, as they entered, they were Transfigured and had raiment put on that shone like Gold. They also had Crowns placed upon their heads in token of their Honor [Jn.12:26] and Harps placed in their hands for their everlasting Praise of their God and King.

Then all the bells rang again for joy and it was said unto them, “Well done, good and faithful Servants; enter into the Joy of your Lord” [Mt.25:21]. I also heard the Pilgrims sing with a loud voice, saying, “Blessing, Honor, Glory, and Power be to Him that sits upon the Throne, and to the Lamb, forever, and ever” [Rev.5:13, 14].

Now just as the Gates were opened to let them in I looked in after them; and behold the City shone like the Sun, the streets were paved with Gold, and in them walked many men with Crowns on their heads, Palm Branches in their hands, and Golden Harps with which to sing praises.

There were also among them Living Creatures with wings who did say without interruption, “Holy, Holy, Holy is the Lord God the Almighty, who was and who is and who is to come” [Rev.4:8]. And after that, they shut up the Gates: which when I had seen, I wished that I myself were there among them.

## THE CONCLUSION

*Now, Reader, I have told my Dream to thee,  
See if you can Interpret it to me,  
Or to Yourself, or Neighbor; but take heed  
Of misinterpreting; for that, instead  
Of doing Good, will but yourself abuse:  
By misinterpreting, Evil ensues.  
Take heed also that you be not extreme  
To despise the Outside of my dream:  
Nor let my Figure or similitude  
Lead you into Laughter, or a Feud;  
Leave this for Boys and Fools; but as for thee,  
Do thou the Substance of my matter see.*

*Open the curtains, look within my veil,  
Search out my metaphors, and do not fail;  
There, if you seek them, such things you’ll find  
As will be helpful to an honest mind.*

*What of my Dross you find here, be bold  
To throw away, but yet preserve the Gold.  
What if my Gold be wrapped up in ore?  
None throws away the Apple for the Core.  
But if you shall cast all away as vain,  
I know not by what else your soul to gain.*

